# Development of a double-sided ladder for tracking in high-energy physics 

Benjamin Boitrelle

## To cite this version:

Benjamin Boitrelle. Development of a double-sided ladder for tracking in high-energy physics. Physics [physics]. Université de Strasbourg, 2017. English. NNT : 2017STRAE033 . tel-01827266

HAL Id: tel-01827266
https://theses.hal.science/tel-01827266
Submitted on 2 Jul 2018

HAL is a multi-disciplinary open access archive for the deposit and dissemination of scientific research documents, whether they are published or not. The documents may come from teaching and research institutions in France or abroad, or from public or private research centers.

L'archive ouverte pluridisciplinaire HAL, est destinée au dépôt et à la diffusion de documents scientifiques de niveau recherche, publiés ou non, émanant des établissements d'enseignement et de recherche français ou étrangers, des laboratoires publics ou privés.

# ÉCOLE DOCTORALE PHYSIQUE ET CHIMIE-PHYSIQUE <br> Institut Pluridisciplinaire Hubert Curien 

## THĖSE presentié par:

## Benjamin BOITRELLE

soutenue le : 13 février 2017
pour obtenir le grade de : Docteur de l'université de Strasbourg Discipline : Physique des particules élémentaires

## Développement d'une échelle double face pour la trajectométrie en physique des hautes énergies

THÈSE dirigée par:
[M BAUDOT Jérôme]
[Mme GREGOR Ingrid-Maria] (co-encadrante)
RAPPORTEURS :
[M BAMBADE Philip]
[M SCHOERNER-SADENIUS Thomas]

Professeur, université de Strasbourg
Doktor, DESY, Hambourg

Directeur de recherche, LAL, Orsay
Doktor, DESY, Hambourg

AUTRES MEMBRES DU JURY :

## Contents

Introduction ..... 1
1 Theoretical background ..... 3
1.1 The Standard Model ..... 4
1.1.1 Introduction ..... 4
1.1.2 Quantum Field Theory ..... 6
1.2 Towards a unified theory ..... 12
1.2.1 Symmetry Breaking mechanism and Goldston theorem ..... 13
1.2.2 Higgs mechanism ..... 14
1.3 Beyond the Standard Model ..... 18
1.3.1 Limitations of the Standard Model ..... 18
1.3.2 Theories beyond the Standard Model ..... 21
1.4 Conclusions ..... 23
2 Towards a linear future: the International Linear Collider ..... 25
2.1 Towards a linear electron collider ..... 26
2.1.1 Advantages of a linear lepton collider ..... 26
2.1.2 Future linear lepton collider ..... 28
2.2 The ILC machine ..... 28
2.2.1 Baseline design ..... 28
2.2.2 Machine design and beam parameters ..... 29
2.2.3 Beam backgrounds ..... 31
2.3 The ILC detector concepts ..... 33
2.3.1 Overview of the two experiments ..... 33
2.3.2 Particle Flow Algorithm ..... 34
2.3.3 The ILD detector ..... 35
2.4 Conclusions ..... 41
3 Analysis of the finale state $H \nu \bar{\nu}$ ..... 43
3.1 Modes of operation of the ILC ..... 44
3.2 Higgs boson physics ..... 45
3.2.1 Production of the Higgs SM boson at the ILC ..... 46
3.2.2 Higgs boson studies ..... 46
3.3 Analysis of simulated data ..... 52
3.3.1 Simulation set-up ..... 52
3.3.2 Event generation ..... 53
3.4 Results ..... 57
3.4.1 Event reconstruction ..... 57
3.4.2 Event selection ..... 58
3.5 Outlook ..... 59
4 ILD vertex detector and PLUME project ..... 61
4.1 The ILD vertex detector specifications ..... 62
4.1.1 Performance requirements ..... 62
4.1.2 Layout of the vertex detector ..... 65
4.2 PLUME ..... 68
4.2.1 Design and goals ..... 68
4.2.2 Prototypes ..... 69
4.2.3 Perspectives ..... 72
4.3 Integration of CMOS sensors ..... 73
4.3.1 Charge creation and signal collection ..... 74
4.3.2 Advantages and disadvantages of the technology ..... 75
4.3.3 Signal processing ..... 77
4.3.4 State of the art in high energy physics ..... 82
5 Basic assessments ..... 85
5.1 PLUME assembly procedures ..... 86
5.1.1 Module and ladder assembly ..... 86
5.1.2 Visual inspections ..... 87
5.2 Electrical validation ..... 89
5.2.1 Auxiliary board ..... 89
5.2.2 Smoke test ..... 92
5.2.3 JTAG communication ..... 94
5.3 Noise measurements ..... 95
5.3.1 Characterisation bench ..... 95
5.3.2 Threshold scan ..... 97
5.3.3 Noise measurements ..... 100
5.4 Conclusions ..... 103
6 Deformation studies of a ladder with beam test ..... 105
6.1 Test beam of the full complete PLUME ladder at CERN ..... 106
6.1.1 Test beam facility and beam test set-up ..... 106
6.1.2 Cartesian coordinate systems ..... 106
6.1.3 Measurements ..... 107
6.2 Spatial resolution studies ..... 109
6.2.1 Normal-incidence tracks ..... 109
6.2.2 Ladder tilted in one direction ..... 112
6.3 Benefits of double-sided measurements ..... 122
6.3.1 Spatial resolution with mini-vectors ..... 122
6.3.2 Angular resolution ..... 124
6.4 Conclusions ..... 128
7 Determination of the material budget ..... 129
7.1 Preparation of the test beam ..... 130
7.1.1 Measurements and telescope configuration ..... 130
7.1.2 Acquisition system and experimental set-up ..... 133
7.1.3 Issues during the test beam campaign ..... 135
7.2 Measuring the radiation length ..... 136
7.2.1 Motivation ..... 136
7.2.2 Highland formula ..... 137
7.2.3 The DESY II test beam facility ..... 138
7.3 Analysis ..... 139
7.3.1 Software analysis chain ..... 139
7.3.2 Measurement of the radiation length ..... 141
7.4 Conclusions ..... 149
Conclusions and outlook ..... 151
Résumé de la thèse ..... 155
1.1 Contexte de la thèse ..... 155
1.2 Étude de la désintégration du boson de Higgs ..... 157
1.3 Préparation d'une campagne de tests sous faisceaux ..... 159
1.3.1 Validation en laboratoire des échelles PLUME ..... 159
1.3.2 Étude de la déformation des échelles lors d'une cam- pagne de faisceau test ..... 160
1.3.3 Estimation du budget de matière avec des électrons de basse énergie ..... 161
1.4 Conclusions ..... 166
Acronyms ..... 169
Bibliography ..... 173

## List of Figures

1.1 Summary of the Standard Model particles with their interac- tions [75]. ..... 4
1.2 Higgs potential $V(\phi)$ for $\mu^{2}<0$ [22]. ..... 17
1.3 The vector boson production predicted by the SM at 7 and 8 TeV in comparison with CMS data [22]. ..... 18
2.1 Schematic layout of the International Linear Collider (ILC) [8]. ..... 29
2.2 Schematic view of the bunch structure at the ILC. One bunch train is made of 1312 bunches and lasts 1 ms long. Each bunch crossing is spaced out by 760 ns . Two bunch trains are 199 ms apart from each other [59]. ..... 31
2.3 Overview of the two detectors designs at the ILC. Fgure (a) represents the SiD design while figure (b) shows the ILD ap- proach [9]. ..... 33
2.4 Two different approaches for calorimetry. On the left is the tra- ditional calorimetry method used on most of the experiments, the right one is the particle flow approach for calorimetry. The particle track is taken into account to calculate the jet energy [41] ..... 35
2.5 Quadrant view of the ILD detector concept with its subdetec- tor system [9]. ..... 36
3.1 Feynman diagrams of the main Higgs production at the ILC [4][79]. ..... 46
3.2 The production cross-section of the Higgs boson with a mass of 125 GeV [4] ..... 47
3.3 Recoil mass distribution for the Higgs-strahlung process, in which $Z$ boson is decaying into two muons, for $M_{H}=125 \mathrm{GeV}$ with $250 \mathrm{fb}^{-1}$ at $\sqrt{s}=250 \mathrm{GeV}$ [58]. ..... 48
3.4 Behavior of the cross-section of the Higgs-strahlung at the threshold production, depending on the spin and the CP val- ues. These three plots show the theoretical behavior of the cross-section at the threshold production for $J^{P}=0^{+}, 1^{-}$and $2^{+}$and for a Higgs boson mass of 120 GeV [29]. ..... 49
3.5 Projected Higgs couplings using the model-dependent fit [36]. ..... 50
3.6 The Higgs boson branching ratio with the branching ratio uncertainties for the Higgs boson mass varying from 80 to 200 GeV [23]. ..... 51
3.7 Mass-coupling relation of the Higgs boson to the particles de- fined in the standard model [79] ..... 52
3.8 Distribution of the missing mass with different beam polari- sations and for the Higgs-strahlung and $W W$-fusion leading to $\nu \bar{\nu} H$ final state. The background contribution is not taken into account here ..... 55
3.9 Distribution of the visible mass for the signal and background together and the polarisation $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(-0.8,+0.3)$. ..... 56
4.1 Scheme of the vertex detector impact parameter. To distin- guish $B$-meson and $C$-meson decays, the innermost layer has to be as close as possible to the interaction point. The next layer has to be farer to it. ..... 63
4.2 Overview of the two vertex detector options for the ILC. On the left, the VXD is made of five single sided layers, whereas the right option features three double-sided layers. ..... 65
4.3 Side view (transversal and longitudinal) of the PLUME me- chanical structure ..... 68
4.4 Microscopical view of the silicon carbide foam structure ..... 69
4.5 Graph of the Young modulus in GPa as a function of the radiation length in cm for different materials. ..... 70
4.6 Side and top view of the first PLUME prototype built in 2009. ..... 71
4.7 Front view of the ladder version-1 made in 2010 in its holding box. On the left, there is the connector to the output board servicing, on the right a connection to blow air on the module. As this version was not made with a mirrored design, the flexible cables are not entirely overlapping and the SiC foam can be seen (in black here).72
4.8 Picture of the first mirrored module made with aluminum traces. The cable width is adjusted to the size of the sensor. ..... 72
4.9 Drawing of MAPS structure representing the different layers of the sensor and the path of charge carriers in the epitaxial layer. ..... 76
4.10 Evolution of the spatial resolution achieved for different pitch sizes and for different MIMOSA sensors. ..... 77
4.11 Principle of charge collection in a MAPS. The difference of doping between the substrate and the epitaxial layers create a reflection region. ..... 78
4.12 Two different architectures of pixel. ..... 79
4.13 Schematic operation of the parallel column readout ..... 80
4.14 Principle of the zero suppression logic. ..... 81
4.15 Plots representing the efficiency, the fake hit rate per pixel and the spatial resolution as a function of the discriminator threshold. This results were obtained with minimum ionising particles (pions of 120 GeV ). ..... 83
4.16 Block-diagram and a picture of the MIMOSA-26 ..... 84
4.17 Pictures of the STAR vertex detector and an ULTIMATE chip ..... 84
5.1 Drawing of the ladder assembly. The modules are first placed on the jigs, sensors facing the grooves 5.1a, then the foam and the bate are glued between the two modules 5.1b. ..... 88
5.2 Visualisation of the alignment. The distance between the two edges is $\sim 51 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. ..... 88
5.3 Picture taken with a microscope showing crushed wire-bonds due to a falling cable. Some of the wire-bonds are in contact leading to a shortcut and a non-functional module. ..... 89
5.4 Sketch of the PLUME connection scheme. ..... 91
5.5 Picture of a aluminum mirrored module with the points of measurement for $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{DD}_{\mathrm{D}}}, \mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{DD}_{\mathrm{A}}}$ and $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{clp}}$. ..... 92
5.6 MIMOSA-26 output from oscilloscope. The top yellow line corresponds to the clock, the blue line below to the marker (which lasts 4 clock cycles), and the green and purple lines are the data output containing the hit information ..... 94
5.7 Matrix response for the discriminators half activated. ..... 96
5.8 Matrix response in discriminator mode, where all the discrim- inators are opened. On the right of the matrix, one row is not working correctly and some pixels are never activated ..... 97
5.9 Matrix response in discriminator mode, where all the discrim- inators are closed. One line of pixels is always activated, as well as few pixels in one column. This will increase the fake hit rate of the sensor. ..... 98
5.10 Pixels response of a threshold scan around the middle-point of discriminators for a sub-matrix. ..... 99
5.11 Noise performances of a sub-matrix for the discriminators and the pixel array output. The temporal noise is plotted on the left plot, whereas the fixed pattern noise is represented on the right plot. ..... 99
5.12 Accumulation of $10^{4}$ events at a thresholds of 5 times the noise acquired in the dark for one sensor. ..... 101
5.13 Accumulation of $10^{4}$ events at a threshold of 5 times the noise with a ${ }^{55} \mathrm{Fe}$ radiation source for one sensor. ..... 101
5.14 Results of the fake hit rate measurement for a threshold three times bigger than the noise. The top left plot represents a raw picture of the million events accumulated over the whole matrix. The top right one is the distribution of the number of pixels hit per event. The bottom left plot is the fake hit rate per pixel distribution, while the bottom right one is the fake hit rate relative to the average rate distribution. ..... 102
5.15 Distribution of the fake hit rate per pixel. ..... 103
6.1 Drawing of the laboratory coordinates. The $x$ and $z$-axes de- fine the horizontal plane. If detector planes (reference or DUT) are not rotated, then $(u, v, w)$ directions match $(x, y, z)$ direc- tions. ..... 107
6.2 Top view sketches of the test beam configuration for different ladder positions: 6.2 a is for normal incidence, 6.2 b and 6.2 c are for tilted ladder. ..... 108
6.3 Residual distributions in the $u$ and $v$ directions for the second and third telescope planes. ..... 111
6.4 Results of the DUT alignment: 6.4a is the residual $\Delta U$ as a function of the hit position on the $v$-direction, 6.4 b is the residual $\Delta V$ as a function of the hit position on the $u$-direction, 6.4 c is the residual $\Delta U$ as a function of the hit position on the same direction, 6.4 d is the same plot for the other direc- tion, 6.4 e and 6.4 f are the residuals distributions in the two directions. ..... 113
6.5 Distribution of the residuals obtained for the front sensor with a tilt of $36^{\circ}: 6.5 \mathrm{a} \Delta u=f\left(v_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.5 \mathrm{~b} \Delta v=f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.5 \mathrm{c} \Delta u=$ $f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.5 \mathrm{~d} \Delta v=f\left(v_{\text {hit }}\right)$, 6.5e distribution of the residual $\Delta u$ and $6.5 f$ distribution of the residual $\Delta v$. ..... 114
6.6 Distribution of the residuals obtained for the back sensor with a tilt of $36^{\circ}: 6.6 \mathrm{a} \Delta u=f\left(v_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.6 \mathrm{~b} \Delta v=f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.6 \mathrm{c} \Delta u=$ $f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.6 \mathrm{~d} \Delta v=f\left(v_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.6 \mathrm{e}$ distribution of the residual $\Delta u$ and 6.6 f distribution of the residual $\Delta v$. ..... 115
6.7 Results of the mechanical survey of each side of a dummy PLUME mechanical prototype. The $x$ coordinate used in this plot is along the ladder length, while $y$ is along its width ..... 116
6.8 Side view of the sensor's deformation ..... 117
6.9 Profile of the scatter plot showing the track-hit residual in the$u$-direction as a function of the hit position on the plane for thesame direction: 6.9a shows the profile of the front plane and6.9 b shows the profile of the back plane. Both profiles werefitted with a sum of Legendre polynomials up to the eleventhorder. p1 to p10 are the coefficients $\omega_{k}$ of equation 6.4 of thepolynomials119
6.10 Results of the alignment after applying the Legendre poly- nomial correction and taking into account the angle of the incoming particles for the front sensor: 6.10c $\Delta u=f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right)$ and 6.10 d distribution of the residuals. ..... 120
6.11 Results of the alignment after applying the Legendre polynomial correction and taking into account the angle of the in-coming particles for the back sensor: 6.11c $\Delta u=f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right)$ and6.11 d distribution of the residuals.121
6.12 Principle of the mini-vector. The two hits (in red) on the planes $x_{1}$ and $x_{2}$ are connected and the intersection of the connecting line with virtual intermediate plane $x_{\mathrm{m}}$ is then de- termined. The blue points represents the track extrapolated through the DUT. ..... 123
6.13 Residual distribution for both sides of the ladder in the $u$ direction ..... 124
6.14 Residual distribution of the mini-vector measured on the in- termediate plane. ..... 124
6.15 Distribution of the angle between the tracks direction and the mini-vectors direction. ..... 125
6.16 Representation of angle displacements between different sizes of clusters on both sides of a ladder. A thicker arrow indicates the main displacement between the two pixels fired, whereas a thinner one is used for tracks hitting a nearby pixel. Grey areas are the position of the reconstructed hit, which could be between two pixels or centered on one pixel, depending on the cluster size. ..... 126
6.17 Minimum distance between the cluster projected on one side to the position of the cluster of this side. ..... 127
7.1 Estimation of the track extrapolation resolution at the DUT position as a function of the distance between two telescope planes of the same arm for electrons with an energy of 4.7 GeV . The blue line is the results for six planes, whereas the red line is for four planes. The dashed lines are the maximal distance between two planes due to the rail limitation of the telescope frame. ..... 132
7.2 TCAD model of the mechanical structure designed for the test beam in April 2016. The ladder is held on a circular frame fixed to a rotation stage, mounted onto an XY-table. ..... 134
7.3 Schematic of the test beam set-up. The PMTs are used for triggering. The clock and marker are read from only one sen- sor, here it comes from one PLUME sensor. ..... 135
7.4 Picture taken during the test beam. The beam is coming out of the magnet (large red frame) before reaching the four tele- scope planes (aluminum square frames), the DUT (elongated box) and the PMTs (one is visible at the left-end of the pic- ture). The set-up is mounted on a floating frame insuring the electrical grounding. ..... 136
7.5 Schematic layout of the DESY-II test beam facility [26]. ..... 138
7.6 Rate for different momentum and with different converter tar- gets [26]. ..... 139
7.7 Flow-chart of the analysis strategy with the EUTelescope soft- ware [2] ..... 140
7.8 Schematic of the setup that was used throughout the exper- iment. The beam hit each of the front MIMOSA-26 sensors, then scatter off the PLUME ladder before passing through the last three sensors ..... 143
7.9 Distribution of the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ given by GBL for an energy of 5 GeV without any fiducial cut. The asymmetry of the distribution arises from an incorrect alignment procedure. ..... 144
7.10 Distribution of the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ given by GBL for an energy of 4 GeV without any fiducial cut. ..... 145
7.11 Distribution of the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ given by GBL for an energy of 3 GeV without any fiducial cut ..... 145
7.12 Distribution of the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ given by GBL for an energy of 2 GeV without any fiducial cut ..... 146
7.13 Distribution of the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ given by GBL for an energy of 1 GeV without any fiducial cut. ..... 146
7.14 Dependence of the measured standard deviation of the kink angle with the energy, over the full range of the energies used. Superimposed is a fit using the Highland formula where the material budget is left as a free parameter ..... 147
7.15 Extrapolation of the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ with the energy, over a restricted range of the energies used. Superimposed is a fit using the Highland formula, where the material budget is left as a free parameter. ..... 148

# 7.16 Schematic of the PLUME ladder composition. The sub-structure of a MIMOSA-26 sensor is represented here. The signal is considered as created in the middle of the epitaxial layer. The red-dashed boxes are the regions of the sensors that are not included into the material budget calculation. <br> 149 

7.17 Measured material budget $\frac{x}{X_{0}}$ as a function of the momentum $p .150$ ..... 150
1.18 Schéma de l'ILD, un des deux détecteurs prévus à l'ILC. ..... 155
1.19 Schéma du principe final de l'échelle PLUME ..... 156
1.20 Diagrammes de Feynman des principaux processsus de pro- duction du boson de Higgs à l'ILC [4] [79]. ..... 157
1.21 Résultat de l'analyse de l'échelle inclinée à $36^{\circ}$ : 1.21a résidus point d'impact/trace selon la direction $u$ en fonction de la position du point d'impact dans la même direction avant la correction, 1.21 b résidu selon $u$ en fonction du point d'impact dans la même direction après prise en compte de la déforma- tion, 1.21 c distribution des résidus point d'impact/trace avant correction et 1.21 d distribution des résidus après correction. ..... 161
1.22 Photo prise pendant la campagne de faisceau test au DESY. Le faisceau sort de l'aimant (le gros bloc rouge) avant de toucher les quatres plans de télescope (les cadres en aluminium car- rés), l'échelle PLUME montée sur un support rotatif (boîte al- longée) et les photomultiplicateurs (l'un est visible à la gauche de la photo devant un plan de télescope). ..... 162
1.23 Distribution de l'angle de déflexion mesurée à une énergie de 4 GeV et ajustée par une fonction gaussienne. ..... 164
1.24 Extrapolation de l'angle de déflexion en fonction de l'énergie incidente pour une gamme d'énergie comprise entre 2 et 4 GeV . Cette courbe est ajustée par la formule d'Highland (voir l'équation 1.8) où la longueur de radiation est un paramètre libre. . . . . . . 165

## List of Tables

1.1 Summary of the 12 types fermions. L is a quantum number associated to the leptons. Its value is 1 for leptons and -1 for anti-leptons. B is a quantum number associated to the baryons. It is equal to 1 for a baryon and to -1 for an anti- baryon [68]. ..... 6
1.2 Summary of the interactions and the bosons defined in the Standard Model [68]. The range corresponds to the distance on which the interaction is still effective. As the gravitational interaction is not part of the SM, the graviton is not included in this table. ..... 7
1.3 List of particles and the SUSY super-partners associated. The gauge fields are described before and after broken SUSY. ..... 22
2.1 Summary of parameters aimed for the silicon tracker using micro-strips sensors. These detectors are complementary to the TPC and the vertex detector ..... 38
3.1 Summary of the major processes that will be studied at the ILC at different energies [5]. ..... 45
3.2 Cut-flow table for a beam polarisation $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(-0.8,+0.3)$. ..... 59
4.1 Impact parameter resolution for different collider experiments [48]. ..... 64
4.2 Possible performances for the three double-sided layers vertex detector. $R$ is the radius position of the considered layer, $\sigma_{\text {sp }}$ the spatial resolution and $\sigma_{\text {time }}$ the integration time [85]. ..... 66
4.3 Estimation of the material budget for the different prototypes of the PLUME ladder. ..... 73
6.1 Fit results of the scatter plot $\Delta U=f(U)$ for the first eleventh
orders of Legendre polynomials and the residuals obtained on
each side of the PLUME ladder. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 119
6.2 Alignment results for different angles before and after using
the correction based on Legendre polynomials without taking
into account the resolution of the telescope. . . . . . . . . . . 121
7.1 Estimation of the resolution on the track extrapolation $\sigma_{\text {res }}$ at the DUT position for a telescope with four planes and six planes. Practical issues, such as the alignment, will limit the precision on the track extrapolation to 100 nm .132
7.2 Determination of the expected kink angle $\left.\theta_{0}\right|_{\text {expected }}$ for a material budget of $0.5 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$ and comparison to the measured kink angle $\left.\theta_{0}\right|_{\text {measured }}$. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 147
1.3 Sélection du signal sur le bruit en appliquant différentes coupures consécutives pour une polarisation faisceau $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(-0.8,+0.3)$.
Les colonnes "Bruit" et "Signal" indiquent les nombres d'évènements. 158

## Introduction

In 2012, the Large Hadron Collider (LHC) detected a new particle compatible with the boson predicted by the Higgs-Englert-Brout mechanism, which explains the spontaneous electro-weak symmetry breaking among elementary interactions. Although the energy and luminosity upgrades could improve the knowledge of this new particle and also find existence of physics beyond the Standard Model (SM), the complex environment of the events generated by the LHC hides fundamental parameters of the collisions that help to perform precise measurements.

To overcome this limitation and complement the LHC programme, one of the biggest scientific projects is under preparation. The International Linear Collider (ILC) will be a linear eletron-positron collider with a length of 31 kilometres and a centre-of-mass energy ranging from 250 to 500 GeV (with a possible upgrade to 1 TeV ). It will be able to perform more accurate measurements of known particles (like the coupling of the Higgs boson to fermions), but also to study the dark matter and physics beyond the SM.

This project imposes new challenges on the instrumentation side. For instance, to measure the Higgs coupling to charm quarks, a precise measurement of the secondary vertices created close to the interaction point is needed. The inner part of the detector used to reconstruct vertices, should combine a good spatial resolution ( $\leqslant 3 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ ) and a material budget of less than a thousandth of the radiation length $\left(\mathrm{X}_{0}\right)$. This subdetector, called the vertex detector, should be optimised (geometry, granularity, timing) to perform tracking in a high particle density environment.

The Pixelated Ladder with Ultra-low Material Embedding (PLUME) collaboration is developing devices to overcome this challenge thanks to an innovative concept of double-sided detection layers. Two families of prototypes have been built. Both exploit the Complementary Metal Oxide Semiconductor (CMOS) technology for the pixel senors which cover each side of the device layer. They differ by their material budget. While the first prototype focus on the electric functionality, the second prototype targets a
material budget of $0.35 \%$ radiation length $\left(\mathrm{X}_{0}\right)$. The main purpose of this work is to validate the benefits of PLUME concept and characterise the performances of the prototypes in terms of spatial resolution, angular resolution and confirm their actual material budget.

This work gives an overview of the validation and characterisation of such a complex detector and aims to detail its performance, such as the spatial resolution, the benefits of double-sided measurements and confirmed the actual the material budget of such a device. This document is organised as followed: the theoretical context is presented in chapter 1, with an overview of the SM and theories beyond the SM. Chapter 2 presents the future linear collider, the ILC focusing especially on one of the experiments, the International Large Detector (ILD). Chapter 3 introduces the different physics studies that will be performed at the ILC and focus especially on a possible analysis of the $\nu \bar{\nu} H$ channel at the ILC. In chapter 4, the different Vertex Detector (VXD) for the ILD are presented, as well as a description of the PLUME collaboration and the status of the detectors produced. The three last chapters are devoted to the studies performed during this thesis. In chapter 5 , the validation in the laboratory of the different PLUME modules are reported. Chapter 6 presents the observation of the ladder deformation during a test beam campaign which was done in 2011 at Centre Européen pour la Recherche Nucléaire (CERN). It also shows the benefits of a doublesided measurement compared to a single-sided ladder. Chapter 7 deals with the measurement of the radiation length of the first fully working PLUME ladder, which has a weighted material budget $\left(\mathrm{X}_{0}\right)$ estimated to be $0.65 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$. Finally, the conclusion summarises the work performed during the thesis and the outlook is discussed.

## Chapter 1

## Theoretical background

This chapter attempts to understand the world around us using a mathematical framework which describes matter and its interactions. Firstly, the laws that rule the Universe will be presented. Then, it will focus on the mathematical framework itself with the description of three interactions: the electromagnetic interaction (EM), the weak and the strong interaction. Afterward, a framework that unifies the EM and weak interaction, as well as the spontaneous symmetry breaking will be studied. Finally, the limits of this theory and the possible solution to overcome these issues will be tackled.

## Contents

1.1 The Standard Model . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 4
1.1.1 Introduction . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 4
1.1.2 Quantum Field Theory . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 6
1.2 Towards a unified theory . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 12
1.2.1 Symmetry Breaking mechanism and Goldston the-
orem . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 13
1.2.2 Higgs mechanism . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 14
1.3 Beyond the Standard Model . . . . . . . . . . . . . 18
1.3.1 Limitations of the Standard Model . . . . . . . . . 18
1.3.2 Theories beyond the Standard Model . . . . . . . . 21
1.4 Conclusions . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 23

### 1.1 The Standard Model

### 1.1.1 Introduction

## Leptons



Figure 1.1 - Summary of the Standard Model particles with their interactions [75].

The Standard Model (SM) is a theory describing the elementary structure of matter. It is one of the most successful achievements in modern physics. The elegant theoretical framework of the SM explains experimental results but also predicts a wide variety of phenomena. It depicts the interactions between the fundamental constituents of matter, called elementary particles. A quantum formalism describes an elementary particle with a set of quantum numbers. This quantum numbers are the spin, the intrinsic angular momentum, the parity P, the electric charge, etc. They are used to distinguish the 'matter' particles from the 'force carrier' particles.

The half-integer spin particles obey to the Fermi-Dirac statistics and are subjected to the Pauli exclusion principle: they cannot occupy the same
quantum state at the same time. These particles, that are the constituents of matter, are called fermions and they are twelve types. Fermions are divided into two categories: leptons and quarks.

There are six lepton types: three charged particles and three neutral ones, called neutrino $\nu$. At the end of the $19^{\text {th }}$ century, the first fundamental particle, the electron ( $e^{-}$), was discovered by Thomson. The two other charged leptons were discovered in 1937 for the muon $(\mu)$ and in 1975 for the tau $(\tau)$. Three neutrinos are associated with the three flavored leptons: the electron neutrino $\left(\nu_{e}\right)$ discovered in 1953, the muon neutrino $\left(\nu_{\mu}\right)$ in 1962 [21] and the tau neutrino $\left(\nu_{\tau}\right)$ discovered in 2000 [17].

They are in total six quarks. They cannot be found alone in nature. They too carry a quantum number: color. The color quantum numbers are green, blue and red (and the anti-color associated). They are always in a bound state to form composite particles that are colorless and are called hadrons. A quark and an anti-quark form an integer spin composite particle, called a meson. Three quarks bound together are called baryons. The most known baryons are the proton and the neutron. They are made of up quarks (u) and down quarks $(d)$. The other quarks were discovered in the second half of the $20^{\text {th }}$ century. The strange quark $(s)$ was discovered in 1968, followed by the charm quark (c) in 1974. Then, the bottom quark or beauty quark (b) was discovered in 1977. The last quark discovered was the top quark $(t)$ in 1995.

Depending on the particle's mass, the fermions are divided into three categories called generation. The first generation of particles forms the ordinary matter and is composed of the electron, the electron neutrino, the $u$ and $d$ quarks. The two other generations are particles found in cosmic rays or in collisions with accelerators. All the fermions and their properties are summarised in table 1.1.

There is a second type of particle called bosons or gauge bosons. They have an integer spin and follow the Bose-Einstein statistics. Contrary to fermions, bosons are not limited to a single state occupancy. The bosons are the mediators of the four fundamental interactions, which are the following:

EM interaction: It describes the interaction between two charges particles. It is mediated by the photon $\gamma$, a massless and chargeless spin 1 particle.

Weak interaction: It is the interaction responsible for the $\beta$ radioactive decay (a nucleon decays into another one with the emission of a lepton and a neutrino). The mediators of the weak interaction are the neutral electrical charged boson $\left(Z^{0}\right)$ and two electrical charged bosons ( $W^{+}$ and $W^{-}$).

| Type | Family | Particle | L | B | Qe | Mass (MeV) |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Leptons | $1^{\text {st }}$ | $e$ | 1 | 0 | -1 | 0.511 |
|  |  | $\nu_{e}$ | 1 | 0 | 0 | $<2 \times 10^{-6}$ |
|  | $2^{\text {nd }}$ | $\mu$ | 1 | 0 | -1 | 105.66 |
|  |  | $\nu_{\mu}$ | 1 | 0 | 0 | $<2 \times 10^{-6}$ |
|  | $3^{r d}$ | $\tau$ | 1 | 0 | -1 | $1.78 \times 10^{3}$ |
|  |  | $\nu_{\tau}$ | 1 | 0 | 0 | $<2 \times 10^{-6}$ |
| Quarks | $1^{\text {st }}$ | $u$ | 0 | 1 | 2/3 | $2.3_{-0.5}^{+0.7}$ |
|  |  | $d$ | 0 | 1 | -1/3 | $4.8{ }_{-0.3}^{+0.5}$ |
|  | $2^{\text {nd }}$ | $s$ | 0 | 1 | -1/3 | $95 \pm 5$ |
|  |  | c | 0 | 1 | 2/3 | $1.275 \times 10^{3} \pm 2.5$ |
|  | $3^{r d}$ | $b$ | 0 | 1 | -1/3 | $4.66 \times 10^{3} \pm 30$ |
|  |  | $t$ | 0 | 1 | $2 / 3$ | $173.21 \times 10^{3} \pm 511 \pm 711$ |

Table 1.1 - Summary of the 12 types fermions. L is a quantum number associated to the leptons. Its value is 1 for leptons and -1 for anti-leptons. B is a quantum number associated to the baryons. It is equal to 1 for a baryon and to -1 for an anti-baryon [68].

Strong interaction: It is responsible for the cohesion of the atom's nucleus, as well as the hadrons' cohesion. There are eight mediators called gluons.

Gravitational interactional: It is not described by the SM, but a quantum theory intends to associate a spin 2 boson, called the graviton to the gravitational force. Nevertheless, finding a framework describing the equation of the general relativity and the equation of the quantum numbers is a difficult challenge.

Another boson is predicted by the SM but is not associated to a fundamental interaction, rather to the mass generation mechanism. It is the Higgs boson $(H)$ that was discovered in 2012 at the LHC [15][16]. The mass generation mechanism of particles is presented in section 1.2.2.

Table 1.2 summarises the different bosons of the SM.

### 1.1.2 Quantum Field Theory

The SM is based on a mathematical framework called Quantum Field Theory (QFT). It is a gauge theory, in which a Lagrangian describes an interaction

| Force | Gauge bosons | Mass $\left(\mathrm{GeV} / \mathrm{c}^{2}\right)$ | Electric <br> charge | Range |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Electromagnetic | $\gamma$ | 0 | 0 | $\infty$ |
| Weak | $Z^{0}$ | $91.1876 \pm 0.0021$ | 0 | $10^{-18} \mathrm{~m}$ |
| Strong | $\mathrm{g}(8$ gluons $)$ | $80.3980 \pm 0.0250$ | $\pm 1$ | 0 |
|  | $H$ | $125.7 \pm 0.4$ | 0 |  |

Table 1.2 - Summary of the interactions and the bosons defined in the Standard Model [68]. The range corresponds to the distance on which the interaction is still effective. As the gravitational interaction is not part of the SM, the graviton is not included in this table.
following a particular symmetry. A symmetry is a transformation applied to a system that leaves it invariant. In 1918, Emmy Noether demonstrated that all continuous symmetries of a system implies the conservation of a quantity during its evolution [66]. For examples, symmetries under space translation and time translation imply respectively, conservation of linear momentum and conservation of energy.

In QFT, the interactions are described by following gauge group:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{SU}_{\mathrm{C}}(3) \otimes \mathrm{SU}_{\mathrm{L}}(2) \otimes \mathrm{U}_{\mathrm{Y}}(1) \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\mathrm{SU}_{\mathrm{L}}(2) \otimes \mathrm{U}_{\mathrm{Y}}(1)$ the symmetry group of the electroweak (EW) interaction. The subscript $L$ means that only the left-handed particles are interacting in the weak interaction, whereas the subscript $Y$ is associated with the hypercharge. The gauge symmetry group associated to the strong interaction is $\mathrm{SU}_{\mathrm{C}}(3)$. The subscript $C$ means that only the particles that have a color charge interact via the strong interaction.

The gauge theory is invariant under a continuous set of local transformations. Taking the gauge symmetries and the principle of least action into account, physicists were able to set up equations that describe the dynamic of the interactions with a Lagrangian. The steps to build the Lagrangian for the three forces and the unification of the EM and weak interactions are going to be presented.

## Quantum Electrodynamic

Quantum Electrodynamic (QED) is the QFT that combines the electromagnetism and the quantum mechanics formalisms. The interactions are described using a relativistic Lagrangian that is invariant under a continuous set of transformations. For a free fermion with a mass $m$, the Dirac Lagrangian $\mathcal{L}_{\text {Dirac }}$ is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{\text {Dirac }}=\bar{\Psi}(x)\left(i \gamma^{\mu} \partial_{\mu}-m\right) \Psi(x) \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\Psi(x)$ the spinor field describing the fermion and $\gamma^{\mu}$ are the Dirac matrices.

As QED is built on a local gauge symmetry, the Lagrangian must be invariant under global $\mathrm{U}(1)$ transformations:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Psi(x) \rightarrow \Psi^{\prime}(x)=e^{-i \alpha} \Psi(x) \\
& \bar{\Psi}(x) \rightarrow \bar{\Psi}^{\prime}(x)=e^{i \alpha} \bar{\Psi}(x) \tag{1.3}
\end{align*}
$$

The corresponding local symmetry is:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Psi(x) \rightarrow \Psi^{\prime}(x)=e^{-i \alpha(x)} \Psi(x) \\
& \bar{\Psi}(x) \rightarrow \bar{\Psi}^{\prime}(x)=e^{i \alpha(x)} \bar{\Psi}(x) \tag{1.4}
\end{align*}
$$

By applying the transformation of equation 1.3, the Lagrangian from equation 1.2 becomes:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{\text {Dirac }}^{\prime}=\mathcal{L}_{\text {Dirac }}-\bar{\Psi} \gamma^{\mu} \Psi \partial_{\mu} \alpha \tag{1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Although the mass term of the Lagrangian in equation 1.5 stays invariant under the local symmetry, the term containing a partial derivative does not. To keep the Lagrangian invariant, a gauge field $A_{\mu}$ is introduced:

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{\mu} \rightarrow A_{\mu}-\frac{1}{e} \partial_{\mu} \alpha \tag{1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, the partial derivative is replaced by a covariant one:

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{\mu} \Psi(x)=\left(\partial_{\mu}-i Q_{e} A_{\mu}\right) \Psi(x) \tag{1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

The gauge field is not yet a dynamic field. To get a physical gauge field, a kinetic term should be added to the equation. This gauge invariant term that includes a derivative of the $A_{\mu}$ field is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{\mu \nu}=\partial_{\mu} A_{\nu}-\partial_{\nu} A_{\mu} \tag{1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

The Lagrangian, which is locally invariant, is the one that describes QED:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{\mathrm{QED}}=\bar{\Psi}(x)\left(i \gamma^{\mu} D_{\mu}-m\right) \Psi(x)-\frac{1}{4} F_{\mu \nu}(x) F^{\mu \nu}(x) . \tag{1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

A mass term $m A_{\mu} A^{\mu}$ for the field $A_{\mu}$ is missing because it would break the gauge invariance. That consideration matches to the fact that the photon is a massless boson. Moreover, the EM coupling is labelled $\alpha$ and is value is about $\frac{1}{137}$.

## Weak interaction

In 1930, Pauli explained the continuous spectrum of the electron in the $\beta$ decay by the existence of new particle which respects the principle of energy conservation. It is a light particle, which does not interact much with matter.

After the discovery of the neutron by Chadwick in 1932 [13], Fermi wrote a theory on the weak interaction to explain the $\beta$ decay [34]. He postulated that the neutron is decaying into a proton by emitting an electron and a light neutral particle, called a neutrino. In analogy to electromagnetism, he proposed a current-current Lagrangian to describe the $\beta$ decay.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{\text {weak }}=\frac{G_{F}}{\sqrt{2}}\left(\bar{p} \gamma_{\mu} n\right)\left(\bar{e} \gamma_{\mu} \nu\right), \tag{1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where, $G_{F}$ is the Fermi constant $G_{F}=1.166 \cdot 10^{-5} \mathrm{GeV}^{-2} . p, n, e$ and $\nu$ are respectively the vector currents describing the proton, the neutron, the electron and the neutrino.

Nevertheless, the non-relativistic limit leads to an incomplete theory. The interaction considered with a 2-component spinor transforms a proton into a neutron without changing the position, the spin or the parity. However, Lee and Yang postulated in 1956 that the weak interaction violates the parity after analysing the decays of the $\tau$ and $\theta$ particles [57]. The Wu experiment [83] confirmed this hypothesis in 1957 by studying the decay of ${ }^{60} \mathrm{Co}$.

The Fermi interaction was modified by Feynman and Gell-Mann [35] to a $V-A$ theory ${ }^{1}$. The vector current is now subtracted by an axial vector current. For example, the neutrino current is replaced by:

$$
\begin{align*}
\bar{e}(x) \gamma_{\mu} \nu \rightarrow \quad & \bar{e} \gamma_{\mu}\left(1-\gamma_{5}\right) \nu  \tag{1.11}\\
= & \bar{e} \gamma_{\mu} \nu-\bar{e} \gamma_{\mu} \gamma_{5} \nu
\end{align*}
$$

with $\bar{e} \gamma_{\mu} \nu$ a current vector and $\bar{e} \gamma_{\mu} \gamma_{5} \nu$ an axial current vector.
It was established that the weak current has the form $V-A$ instead of $V+A$. The weak interaction is only coupling left-handed particles and right-handed anti-particles. The Lagrangian describing the weak interaction can be written as a current interaction:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{\text {weak }}=-\frac{G_{F}}{\sqrt{2}} J^{\mu} J_{\mu}^{\dagger} \tag{1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $J^{\mu}$ is a combination of leptonic and hadronic currents.
Contrary to QED, the weak interaction obeys to a non-Abelian symmetry group ${ }^{2}$, the $\mathrm{SU}(2)$ symmetry group. The matter field could be represented as a doublet $\Psi_{L}$ and a singlet $\Psi_{R}$ of this group.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi_{L}=\binom{\nu_{e L}}{e_{L}}, \quad \Psi_{R}=e_{R} \tag{1.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

The generators of the group are the three Pauli matrices $\sigma_{i}$, associated with a gauge field $W_{\mu}^{i}$. The bosons of the weak interactions are the $W^{ \pm}$and $Z$.

As the left-handed leptons are combined into a doublet, a quantum number called weak isospin $\left(I_{3}\right)$ is associated with them. The charged leptons have a weak isospin $I_{3}=-\frac{1}{2}$ and for the neutrinos $I_{3}=\frac{1}{2}$. Concerning the gauge bosons $W^{ \pm}$and $Z$, the weak isospin is respectively $I_{3}= \pm 1,0$.

## Quantum Chromodynamics

Quantum Chromodynamics (QCD) is the quantum field theory of the strong interaction. In this model, the interaction is due to an $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ gauge group. It produces 8 gauge fields called gluons. The spinors of this theory are the six quarks that form a triplet with respect to the gauge symmetry.

[^0]The $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ gauge group is a group of $9-1=8$ real parameters and of 8 generators. Those generators are the Gell-Mann matrices. The normalised generators are defined by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
T^{a}=\frac{1}{2} \lambda^{a} . \tag{1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

The structure constant $f^{a b c}$ can be expressed as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
i f^{a b c}=2 \operatorname{Tr}\left(\left[T^{a}, T^{b}\right] T^{c}\right) \tag{1.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Each of them is considered as a triplet state with respect to the $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ group:

$$
q_{i}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
q_{i}^{1}  \tag{1.16}\\
q_{i}^{2} \\
q_{i}^{3}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $q_{i}$ are the six quarks, that can have three different states, called color. These charged colors are red, blue and green.

As the local gauge symmetry $\mathrm{U}(1)$ is included into the $\mathrm{SU}(3)$ group, the gauge field $A_{\mu}$ is modified to be:

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{\mu}=g_{S} A_{\mu}^{a} \frac{\lambda^{a}}{2} \tag{1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $a=1, \cdots, 8$ corresponding to the 8 gluons. To keep the gauge invariance, there is no mass term $m_{g} A_{a}^{\mu} A_{\mu}^{a}$. Thus, the gluons are massless.

The covariant derivative is also rewritten to keep the gauge invariance:

$$
\begin{align*}
D_{\mu} & =\partial_{\mu}-i A_{\mu} \\
& =\partial_{\mu}-i g_{S} A_{\mu}^{a} \frac{\lambda^{a}}{2} . \tag{1.18}
\end{align*}
$$

The QED field $F_{\mu \nu}$ is not gauge invariant in QCD. Nevertheless, an additional term to obtain a gauge invariant field tensor can be introduced:

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{\mu \nu}^{a}=\left(\partial_{\mu} A_{\nu}^{a}-\partial_{\nu} A_{\mu}^{a}\right)+g_{S} f^{a b c} A_{\mu}^{b} A_{\nu}^{c} \tag{1.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally, the QCD Lagrangian is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}=\sum_{i=1}^{6} \bar{q}_{i}\left(i \gamma^{\mu} D_{\mu}-m_{i}\right) q_{i}-\frac{1}{4} G_{\mu \nu}^{a} G_{a}^{\mu \nu} \tag{1.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 1.2 Towards a unified theory

In the late 1960s, a model of unification was postulated by Glashow, Weinberg, and Salam to describe the electroweak (EW) force. The theory rests on an $\mathrm{SU}(2)_{\mathrm{L}} \otimes \mathrm{U}(1)_{\mathrm{Y}}$ symmetry group. It is the simplest group which conserves the properties of EM charge conversion and parity violation of the weak interaction.

For the EW unification, the $\mathrm{U}(1)_{\text {ем }}$ symmetry group describing the EM interaction has to be rewritten. As fermions are described by left-handed doublets and right-handed singlets, the $\mathrm{U}(1)_{\text {ем }}$ breaks the gauge invariance. The weak isospin group $\mathrm{SU}(2)_{\mathrm{L}}$ is combined with the EM charge to create the hypercharge given by the Gell-Mann-Nishijima relation:

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q=I_{3}+\frac{1}{2} Y \tag{1.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

The $I_{3}$ term is the third component of the weak isospin. With the introduction of the hypercharge, the EM gauge invariance is conserved.

The EW Lagrangian is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{\mathrm{EW}}=\mathcal{L}_{\mathrm{YM}}+\mathcal{L}_{\text {fermions }} . \tag{1.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

The first term $\mathcal{L}_{\mathrm{YM}}$ is the Yang-Mills Lagrangian that describes the bosons gauge interactions (kinetic term + interaction between bosons). It has the following form, below:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{\mathrm{YM}}=-\frac{1}{4} \mathbf{W}_{\mu \nu}^{a} \mathbf{W}^{a \mu \nu}-\frac{1}{4} \mathbf{B}_{\mu \nu} \mathbf{B}^{\mu \nu} \tag{1.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{W}_{\mu \nu}^{a}(i=1,2,3)$ and $\mathbf{B}_{\mu \nu}$ are the gauge fields corresponding respectively to $\mathrm{SU}(2)$ and $\mathrm{U}(1)$ groups. The tensors of these fields are written:

$$
\begin{gather*}
\mathbf{W}_{\mu \nu}=\partial_{\mu} \mathbf{W}_{\nu}-\partial_{\nu} \mathbf{W}_{\mu}-i g\left[\mathbf{W}_{\mu}, \mathbf{W}_{\nu}\right] \text { and }  \tag{1.24}\\
\mathbf{B}_{\mu \nu}=\partial_{\mu} \mathbf{B}_{\nu}-\partial_{\nu} \mathbf{B}_{\mu} . \tag{1.25}
\end{gather*}
$$

Where $g$ is the coupling constant of the $\mathrm{SU}(2)$ gauge group. In equation $1.24, \mathbf{W}_{\mu}=\sum W_{\mu}^{i} \sigma^{i} / 2$ is a vector of three gauge fields associated to $\mathrm{SU}(2)_{\mathrm{L}}$ and $\sigma^{i}$ are the Pauli matrices. The term $\left[\mathbf{W}_{\mu}, \mathbf{W}_{\nu}\right]$ is associated to
the interactions between the gauge fields. In equation $1.25, \mathbf{B}_{\mu}$ is the only gauge field associated to the $\mathrm{U}(1)_{\mathrm{Y}}$ gauge group.

The Lagrangian describing the fermions field is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{\text {fermions }}=\bar{\Psi}_{L} \gamma^{\mu} D_{\mu} \Psi_{L}+\bar{\Psi}_{R} \gamma^{\mu} D_{\mu} \Psi_{R}, \tag{1.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

with:

$$
\begin{align*}
D_{\mu} \Psi_{L} & =\left(\partial_{\mu}+i g \mathbf{W}_{\mu}-i \frac{g^{\prime}}{2} Y \mathbf{B}_{\mu}\right) \Psi_{L} \text { and } \\
D_{\mu} \Psi_{R} & =\left(\partial_{\mu}-i \frac{g^{\prime}}{2} Y \mathbf{B}_{\mu}\right) \Psi_{R} \tag{1.27}
\end{align*}
$$

In equation 1.27, the covariant derivative has two forms. The weak interaction does not allow coupling of the $W$ bosons to right-handed fermions, whereas the $\gamma$ and $Z$ bosons do.

With the EW Lagrangian described above, the gauge bosons are considered as massless fields. The electroweak interaction does not allow a $m \bar{\Psi} \Psi$ term because it does not transform as a scalar under $\mathrm{SU}(2)_{\mathrm{L}} \otimes \mathrm{U}(1)_{\mathrm{Y}}$. Moreover, the $m^{2} \mathbf{W}_{\mu} \mathbf{W}^{\mu}$ violates the $\mathrm{SU}(2)_{\mathrm{L}}$ gauge invariance of the Lagrangian. The mass terms associated with the physical fields of the gauge bosons are given by a spontaneous symmetry breaking via the Higgs mechanism.

### 1.2.1 Symmetry Breaking mechanism and Goldston theorem

Before introducing the Higgs mechanism, the spontaneous symmetry breaking is presented for a global symmetry. This phenomenon appears in other physics fields, such as phase transitions or laser theory.

A Lagrangian density for a complex scalar field $\phi$ is considered here:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}=\partial^{\mu} \phi^{*} \partial_{\mu} \phi-\mu^{2} \phi^{*} \phi-\lambda\left(\phi^{*} \phi\right)^{2}, \tag{1.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\partial^{\mu} \phi^{*} \partial_{\mu} \phi$ is the kinetic term of a complex scalar field and $\mu^{2} \phi^{*} \phi-$ $\lambda\left(\phi^{*} \phi\right)^{2}$ is related to a scalar potential. The coefficient $\mu^{2}$ is a real parameter. Nevertheless, depending on its sign, the potential can take two forms.

If $\mu^{2}>0$, the symmetry is unbroken and the potential has a minimum at $\phi=0$ which does not degenerate. It describes a particle with a mass $\mu$ and a quartic self-coupling. As the transformation $\phi \rightarrow-\phi$ is respected, this solution is a symmetric one.

When $\mu^{2}<0$, there is not a unique ground state for this system but multiple states with the same vacuum energy. The minima is located on a circle of radius:

$$
\begin{equation*}
v=\sqrt{\frac{-\mu^{2}}{2 \lambda}}>0 \tag{1.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

By choosing a particular solution as the ground state, the symmetry gets spontaneously broken. A parametrisation of the excitations around the ground state is possible by introducing a new field $\phi$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi(x)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(v+\rho(x)+i \Theta(x)) \tag{1.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\rho(x)$ and $\Theta(x)$ real fields and the value $v$ is given by one of the solution from equation 1.29. By injecting this new field in equation 1.28, the Lagrangian becomes:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\partial_{\mu} \rho\right)^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\left(\partial_{\mu} \Theta\right)^{2}-\lambda v^{2} \rho^{2}-\lambda v\left(\rho^{3}+\rho \Theta^{2}\right)-\frac{\lambda}{4}\left(\rho^{2}+\Theta^{2}\right)^{2} \tag{1.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the field $\rho(x)$ describes a state of mass $m_{\rho}=2 \mu^{2}$, coupled to the massless field $\Theta(x)$. The field $\Theta(x)$ describes excitations around a direction in the potential. These excitations are not costing any energy to the system and they correspond to massless bosons, called Goldstone bosons.

### 1.2.2 Higgs mechanism

As seen with the QED and QCD Lagrangian, the bosons generated are massless. Nevertheless, the $W^{ \pm}$and $Z$ bosons have a mass and equation 1.22 of the EW interaction does not include a mass generator. The Higgs-EnglertBrout mechanism solves the origin of the fermions masses [42][30].

The invariant Lagrangian density under $\mathrm{SU}(2)_{\mathrm{L}} \otimes \mathrm{U}(1)_{\mathrm{Y}}$ gauge transformation is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}=\left(D^{\mu} \Phi\right)^{\dagger}\left(D_{\mu} \Phi\right)-V(\Phi), \tag{1.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\Phi$ a doublet of complex scalar fields defined as following:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Phi=\binom{\phi^{+}}{\phi^{0}} . \tag{1.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

The covariant derivative in equation 1.32 is the one of $\mathrm{SU}(2)_{\mathrm{L}} \otimes \mathrm{U}(1)_{\mathrm{Y}}$ given by equation 1.27 and represents the kinetic term. The Higgs potential is similar to the one considered first and also has two solutions depending on the sign of $\mu^{2}$, but only the negative solution is shown here. There is an infinite set of degenerate states with minimum energy:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi_{0}=\sqrt{\frac{1}{2}}\binom{0}{v} \text { with } \mathrm{v}=\sqrt{\frac{-\mu^{2}}{\lambda}}>0 . \tag{1.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

The field $\Phi$ is expanding around its minima using a new field $h(x)$, which describes quantum fluctuations. Moreover, three massless Goldstone fields $\theta^{i}(x)$ are included:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Phi(x)=e^{i \frac{\sigma_{i}}{2} \theta^{i}(x)} \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\binom{0}{v+h(x)} . \tag{1.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

By choosing a particular gauge field, the Goldstone fields are absorbed into the physical field defined by $\mathrm{SU}(2)_{\mathrm{L}} \otimes \mathrm{U}(1)_{\mathrm{Y}}$. The absorption of the massless Goldstone bosons leads to the apparition of a mass term in equation 1.32. In the following part, the electroweak unification is expressed. The new field injected in equation 1.32 modifies the covariant derivative. By omitting any terms containing $h$ and by removing the partial derivative:

$$
\left|\left(i \frac{g}{2} \mathbf{W}_{\mu}+i \frac{g^{\prime}}{2} Y \mathbf{B}_{\mu}\right) \Phi\right|^{2}=\frac{1}{8}\left|\left(\begin{array}{cc}
g W_{\mu}^{3}+g^{\prime} B_{\mu} & g\left(W_{\mu}^{1}-i W_{\mu}^{2}\right)  \tag{1.36}\\
g\left(W_{\mu}^{1}+i W_{\mu}^{2}\right) & -g W_{\mu}^{3}+g^{\prime} B_{\mu}
\end{array}\right)\binom{0}{v}\right|^{2} .
$$

The charged fields can be expressed as a linear combination of gauge fields:

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{\mu}^{ \pm}=\frac{W_{\mu}^{1} \mp i W_{\mu}^{2}}{\sqrt{2}} \tag{1.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

The eigenstates are rewritten as decorrelated terms representing the neutral fields from the EW symmetry group:

$$
\begin{align*}
& Z_{\mu}=\cos \theta_{w} W_{\mu}^{3}-\sin \theta_{w} B_{\mu}  \tag{1.38}\\
& A_{\mu}=\sin \theta_{w} W_{\mu}^{3}+\cos \theta_{w} B_{\mu} \tag{1.39}
\end{align*}
$$

with $\theta_{w}$ the Weinberg angle, which represents a bound between the couplings $g$ and $g^{\prime}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sin \theta_{w}=\frac{g^{\prime}}{\sqrt{g^{2}+g^{\prime 2}}} \text { and } \cos \theta_{w}=\frac{g}{\sqrt{g^{2}+g^{\prime 2}}} \tag{1.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Equation 1.36 becomes:

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|\left(i \frac{g}{2} \mathbf{W}_{\mu}+i \frac{g^{\prime}}{2} Y \mathbf{B}_{\mu}\right) \Phi\right|^{2} & =\frac{1}{8}\left|\left(\begin{array}{cc}
A_{\mu} \sqrt{g^{2}+g^{\prime 2}} & g W_{\mu}^{-} \\
g W_{\mu}^{+} & -Z_{\mu} \sqrt{g^{2}+g^{\prime 2}}
\end{array}\right)\right|^{2}  \tag{1.41}\\
& =\frac{1}{2} M_{Z}^{2} Z Z^{*}+\frac{1}{2} M_{W}^{2} W^{-} W^{+}
\end{align*}
$$

With $M_{Z}=\frac{1}{2} v \sqrt{g^{2}+g^{\prime 2}}$ and $M_{W}=\frac{1}{2} v g$, the mass of the $Z$ boson and the $W^{ \pm}$bosons. The mass of the photon is consistent with the expectation and is null.

The Higgs mechanism implies the existence of a massive gauge field, the Higgs boson. It is coupled to the other bosons and also to itself. This could be shown by extending the Higgs potential with the field defined in equation 1.35:

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\lambda v^{2} h^{2}-\lambda v h^{3}-\frac{1}{4} \lambda h^{4} \tag{1.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

The first term gives the mass of the Higgs boson, $M_{H}^{2}=2 \lambda v^{2}$, while the second and third terms are the Higgs boson self-interactions. The Higgs boson mass can not be predicted by the theory because it is given by a function of the parameter $\lambda$, which is one of the free parameters of the SM.

Fermions acquire their masses through a Yukawa interaction between the scalar Higgs fields $\Phi$ and $\widetilde{\Phi}$ and the fermion field. The Lagrangian describing the fermion mass mechanism is given below:

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{L}_{\text {Yuk }}=\Gamma_{m n}^{u} \bar{q}_{m, L} \widetilde{\Phi} u_{n, R}+\Gamma_{m n}^{d} & \bar{q}_{m, L} \Phi d_{n, R} \\
& +\Gamma_{m n}^{e} \bar{l}_{m, L} \Phi e_{n, R}+\Gamma_{m n}^{\nu} \bar{l}_{m, L} \widetilde{\Phi} \nu_{n, R}+h . c . \tag{1.43}
\end{align*}
$$



Figure 1.2 - Higgs potential $V(\phi)$ for $\mu^{2}<0$ [22].
with $\Gamma_{m n}$, the Yukawa coupling between the Higgs doublets and fermions. As the combinations $\bar{L} \Phi R$ are $\mathrm{SU}(2)_{\mathrm{L}}$, the Yukawa Lagrangian is gauge invariant. Two representations of the Higgs field is needed to give the mass of fermions. Nevertheless, the SM does not allow the neutrino to have a right-handed partner. Thus, there is no mass term defined through Yukawa coupling. For the first family, the Lagrangian can be written:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\mathcal{L}_{\text {Yuk }}=\Gamma_{e} \overline{(l}\right)_{L} \Phi e_{R}+\Gamma_{u} \bar{q}_{L} \widetilde{\Phi} u_{R}+\Gamma_{d} \bar{q}_{L} \Phi d_{r}+h . c . \tag{1.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

By choosing the Higgs field expanded around is minima:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Phi=\left(\binom{0}{v}\right) \text { and } \Phi=\binom{v}{0}, \tag{1.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

The Yukawa Lagrangian takes the form:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{\text {Yuk }}=\frac{v}{\sqrt{2}}\left(\Gamma_{e}\left(\bar{e}_{L} e_{R}+\bar{e}_{R} e_{L}\right)+\Gamma_{u}\left(\bar{u}_{L} u_{R}+\bar{u}_{R} u_{L}\right)+\Gamma_{d}\left(\bar{d}_{L} d_{R}+\bar{d}_{R} d_{L}\right)\right) . \tag{1.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

From this equation, the masses of fermions is defined as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
m_{i}=-\frac{\Gamma_{i} v}{\sqrt{2}}, i=e, u, d \tag{1.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 1.3 Beyond the Standard Model

The SM constitutes one of the most successful achievements in modern physics. For example, figure 1.3 represents the vector boson production cross-section predicted by the SM for an energy of 7 and 8 TeV compared to CMS data. The predictions are corroborated the measured data. One of its strength is to provide an elegant theoretical framework to describe the known experimental facts about particles, but it also predicts the existence of a mechanism to generate the particle masses via the Higgs mechanism. Nevertheless, this theory does not solved all the questions about the Universe.


Figure 1.3 - The vector boson production predicted by the SM at 7 and 8 TeV in comparison with CMS data [22].

### 1.3.1 Limitations of the Standard Model

In the following section, the limitations of the SM are described.

## Free parameters

Up to 19 free parameters are used in the SM and this theory does not explain their existence. Even if it is not as major problem for the physics itself, the particle physics community has a lack of understanding of these values. The free parameters are:

- the masses of the nine fermions,
- the coupling constants $g$ and $g^{\prime}$ of respectively the $U(1)$ and $S U(2)$ groups,
- the coupling constant of the strong interaction $\alpha_{s}$,
- the three mixing angles, as well as the CP-violating phase of the CKM matrix,
- the Higgs boson mass and the expected vacuum value for the Higgs field vev,
- $\theta_{\mathrm{CP}}^{\mathrm{QCD}}$, a parameter that allows CP violation in QCD .

In addition to these 19 free parameters, 7 other parameters can be considered, thus increasing the number of parameters to 26 . These parameters are the masses of the three neutrinos, as well as the four parameters of the Pontecovro-Maki-Nakagawa-Sakata matrix ${ }^{3}$.

## Hierarchy problem

The hierarchy problem refers to two main energy scale problems of the SM. First of all, the difference between the energy scale of the SM and the Planck scale is of seventeen orders of magnitude. No "intermediate" physics has been found between the two scales. A second problem occurs while considering the Higgs boson mass. The SM does not predict its mass, but it sets some theoretical bounds with respect to $\Lambda$, the energy scale at which the SM is not valid anymore. The theoretical Higgs boson mass is higher than what it should be compared to the EW scale. The Higgs boson interacts with the particles of the SM (fermions, $W$ and $Z$ boson), but it also interacts with itself. Due to the scalar nature of the boson, there are quartic divergences while calculating the loop corrections. The quantum corrections, which take

[^1]into account the coupling of the Higgs boson, are $\Lambda^{2}$ divergent and lead to a huge Higgs boson mass. To avoid that, delicate cancellations should occur between the quantum corrections. These cancellations are known as the fine-tuning problem.

## Gravitation

Although particle physicists are dreaming of a "theory of everything" that will unify the electroweak, strong and gravitational interactions, there is no viable theory to describe gravity from a quantum point of view to include it in the SM and which would be still valid at the macroscopic scale.

## Neutrino mass

The neutrinos defined by the SM are assumed to be exactly massless. Nevertheless at the end of the year 1990, the Super Kamiokande experiment had surprising results [37]. The measured flux of solar and atmospheric neutrons was lower than expected. The result was interpreted by an oscillation of neutrinos between the three leptonic flavors. However, the oscillation is possible only if the neutrino has mass and if the leptonic number is violated [28]. That phenomenon could be considered as a proof of physics beyond the SM.

## Matter-antimatter asymmetry

As discussed at the beginning of this chapter, the SM defines an equal number of types of particles and anti-particles. In the case of the Big Bang theory, it is assumed that matter and antimatter were created in exactly equal amounts. However, if the amount of matter and antimatter was equal, the universe would have been completely annihilated. A mechanism has favoured electrons, protons and neutrons over positrons, antiprotrons and antineutrons. The asymmetry between matter and antimatter could come from a smaller production of antimatter compared to matter during the Big Bang. The matter and antimatter have annihilated, but a part of matter has survived.

The study of the kaon oscillation has shown that this particle is able to transform spontaneously to its own antiparticle and vice-versa. Nevertheless, this transformation is not symmetric: the kaon is slower to turn into an antikaon than the inverse transformation.

## Dark matter and dark energy

Several astrophysical observations indicate that the Universe is made not only of visible matter but also of matter that seems to be invisible to the electromagnetic interaction, called dark matter. In 1933, a measurement of the galaxies velocities in the Coma cluster to determine the cluster mass gave a surprising result. The mass was more than two orders of magnitude bigger than the mass of visible stars in the cluster. It was found that matter of the SM describes only $5 \%$ of the universe content. The rest of the Universe is made of $22 \%$ dark matter and around $73 \%$ dark energy. The neutrinos are possible candidates for dark matter, as they couple to SM matter only via weak interaction, but they cannot account for the entire density of the universe. Nowadays only twelve particles (plus the anti-particles associated) have been observed.

### 1.3.2 Theories beyond the Standard Model

Several theories try to complete the SM. They do not try to solve completely all the problem enumerated above, but they focus on either a specific problem, either on adding new degrees of freedom. This section presents the different problems that can be solved with these theories beyond the SM.

## Supersymmetry

Supersymmetry (SUSY) is a QFT, that relates elementary fermions known to corresponding new bosons, called sfermions and the bosons to corresponding new fermions, called sbosons [74]. The new particles introduced are called super-partners. Table 1.3 summarises the super-partners associated to the SM particles for the exact SUSY and he broken SUSY. They have the same mass, the same quantum numbers but the spin is differing by a half factor. SUSY is a broken symmetry. This will allow the super-particles to acquire very high masses.

SUSY is a good candidate for physics beyond the SM, as it could solve the hierarchy problem without any fine tuning. For example, the loop contributions of one particle to the Higgs are cancelled by the loop contributions of its super-partner. It would be able to provide a framework for the unification of the three gauge interactions at a GUT scale. The lightest super-particle is a good candidate for dark matter.

Despite the fact taht it will answer many questions from the SM, the SUSY breaking mechanism is not clearly identified and there are many possible ways to implement SUSY.

|  | Exact SUSY |  | Broken SUSY |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Particle | Super-partner |  | Corresponding physics |  |
|  | Symbol | Name | Symbol | Name |
| $q$ | $\widetilde{q}_{R}, \widetilde{q}_{L}$ | squarks | $\widetilde{q}_{1}, \widetilde{q}_{2}$ | squarks |
| $l$ | $\widetilde{l}_{R}, \widetilde{l}_{L}$ | sleptons | $\widetilde{\breve{l}}_{1}, \widetilde{l}_{2}$ | squarks |
| $\nu$ | $\widetilde{\sim}$ | sneutrino | $\widetilde{\nu}$ | sneutrino |
| $g$ | $\widetilde{g}$ | sgluino | $\widetilde{g}$ | sgluino |
| $W^{ \pm}$ | $\widetilde{W}^{ \pm}$ | wino |  |  |
| $H_{1}^{+}$ | $\widetilde{H}_{1}^{+}$ | higgsino | $\widetilde{\chi}_{1,2}^{ \pm}$ | charginos |
| $H_{2}^{-}$ | $\widetilde{H}_{2}^{-}$ | higgsino |  |  |
| $\gamma$ | $\widetilde{\gamma}$ | photino |  |  |
| $Z$ | $\widetilde{Z}$ | zino | $\widetilde{\chi}_{1,2,3,4}^{0}$ | neutralinos |
| $H_{1}^{0}$ | $\widetilde{H}_{1}^{0}$ | higgsino |  |  |
| $H_{2}^{0}$ | $\widetilde{H}_{2}^{0}$ | higgsino |  |  |

Table 1.3 - List of particles and the SUSY super-partners associated. The gauge fields are described before and after broken SUSY.

## Grand unification theory

After the success of the electroweak unification, the next step is to include the strong interaction to build the Great Unification Theory (GUT), an extension of the SM. In this framework, the three forces are different manifestations of a single interaction. It includes the $\mathrm{SU}(3)_{\mathrm{C}} \otimes \mathrm{SU}(2)_{\mathrm{L}} \otimes \mathrm{U}(1)_{\mathrm{Y}}$ symmetry group as part of a larger $\operatorname{SU}(5)$ group. The quarks and leptons are ordered in left-handed decuplets and right-handed quintets. The coupling constants are described by only one parameter. There are 24 mediators, the 12 mediators of the SM plus $6 X$ mediators (charge $\pm 4 / 3$ and 3 colors) and $6 Y$ mediators (charge $\pm 1 / 3$ and 3 colors). It predicts the existence of new particles such as leptoquarks ${ }^{4}$, multiple Higgs bosons and new currents.

Unfortunately, the theory is not validated because of its prediction of the proton lifetime. The first GUT was introduced by Georgi and Glashow in 1974 and predicted the decay of the proton [40]. The actual experimental

[^2]limit of the proton lifetime is of $5 \times 10^{32}$ years, whereas the predicted lifetime defined by the $\operatorname{SU}(5)$ group is one order of magnitude lower [68].

## Technicolor

The technicolor is a theory that explains mass generation. Contrary to the EW symmetry, the masses of particles are not generated by the spontaneous symmetry breaking but they are generated by a strong gauge interaction. This interaction is strong and confined at the energy that has been experimentally probed. The approach of the theory avoids the hierarchy problem induced by the SM.

## String theory

Particle physicists have the dream of unifying the forces of the nature to have only one single interaction with four different manifestations. String theory proposes a framework for the "theory of everything". The basic unit of matter is no more considered to be particles but one-dimensional strings of which particles are various vibrational modes. In string theory extra dimensions are predicted, that foresee 10 to 11 space-time dimensions.

### 1.4 Conclusions

Throughout this chapter, the successes and limitations of the SM were discussed. The high energy physics community is trying to study the limit of the SM and is also trying to find some proof of new physics beyond the SM. The LHC at CERN has permitted in 2012 to point out the existence of a Higgs boson. Nevertheless, the beam structure of the LHC is not efficient enough to perform very precise measurements. Because of the collision between protons, the energy of the collision can't be exactly known. The next chapter deals with a future experiment in high energy physics, where electrons and positrons are used to probe matter instead of protons and anti-protons.

## Chapter 2

## Towards a linear future: the International Linear Collider

Since 2008, the Large Hadron Collider (LHC) is the most powerful tool in high-energy physics. It provides a better understanding of the universe, particularly with the discovery, in 2012, of a new particle compatible with the Higgs boson, responsible for the electroweak spontaneous symmetry breaking of the Standard Model (SM) [15, 16]. Although the LHC is an impressive machine able to collide protons at a centre-of-mass energy of 14 TeV , the complex environment of the proton-proton events makes it more difficult to access some fundamental parameters. To test the validity of the SM and other physics theories introduced in chapter 1, the high-energy physics community has converged on the necessity to build a linear electron-positron collider.

This chapter will explain in detail the motivations to invest in a new global project. It will present the complementary nature of lepton and hadron colliders. After giving an overview of the International Linear Collider (ILC) with its basic design and the detector models, we will focus on the design of one of the detectors: the International Large Detector (ILD).

## Contents

2.1 Towards a linear electron collider . . . . . . . . . . 26
2.1.1 Advantages of a linear lepton collider . . . . . . . . 26
2.1.2 Future linear lepton collider . . . . . . . . . . . . . 28
2.2 The ILC machine . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 28
2.2.1 Baseline design . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 28
2.2.2 Machine design and beam parameters . . . . . . . 29
2.2.3 Beam backgrounds ..... 31
2.3 The ILC detector concepts ..... 33
2.3.1 Overview of the two experiments ..... 33
2.3.2 Particle Flow Algorithm ..... 34
2.3.3 The ILD detector ..... 35
2.4 Conclusions ..... 41

### 2.1 Towards a linear electron collider

The most impressive accelerator ever built is located at CERN in Geneva, Switzerland. It has a circumference of nearly 27 kilometers, straddling the Swiss and French border. It is designed to collide two beams of protons or heavy ions, with the possibility to reach centre-of-mass energies of 14 TeV with a peak luminosity of $10^{34} \mathrm{~cm}^{2} \cdot \mathrm{~s}^{-1}$. The main goal of the LHC is studying the Higgs boson and the electroweak symmetry breaking (EWSB). It also performs tests of the SM and searches for new forces and/or particles. The collider covers a wide energy range at the constituent level while running at a fixed beam energy. The particles used for the collision are not elementary and, therefore, the measurements are impacted by the hadronic background produced.

A machine dedicated to precision measurements, complementary to the LHC, would bring very valuable to the physics community. The advantages of a linear electron collider will be presented in the following section.

### 2.1.1 Advantages of a linear lepton collider

First of all, in a hadron collider, because of the compositeness of the particles used, only a part of the total centre-of-mass energy is used during each collision. The typically very significant or dominating rest of the centre-of-mass energy $\sqrt{s}$ is wasted by the so-called beam remnants. And in addition, the four-vector momentum of the interacting particles is not known because of the unknown number of partons in the interaction. In contrast, by colliding leptons, which are structureless objects, the full centre-of-mass energy is available for the elementary process. The initial four-vector momentum of an interaction is exactly known, hence the event could be fully reconstructed.

Secondly, with a lepton collider, the beam energy is tunable and both electron and positron beams can be polarised, leading to a well-known initial
state of the spin configuration.. The selection of an appropriate polarisation can enhance the signal and suppress the background.

Thirdly, the proton-proton interaction cross section is dominated by inelastic background QCD processes. Therefore, signal events tend to be drowned in very many "uninteresting" background events produced during the bunch crossing by the bunches interaction. At the LHC, the bunch crossing rate is 40 MHz with approximately 20 interactions per bunch crossing, representing $10^{9}$ events/s. In consequence, the detectors need a high radiation tolerance, and a selective trigger system has to be used to record data according to the desired physics process of study. The lepton colliders do not suffer from this kind of background and at similar energies, the event rate is lower than those at hadron colliders. Moreover, the interaction of electrons and positrons is purely electroweak. As a consequence, the detector does not have to handle extreme data rates and can be used without any trigger.

Although the electron and positron, have clear advantages over hadrons to perform precise measurements, the choice of a linear collider over a circular one comes from the physics of accelerating charged particles. When charged particles move in a circular accelerator, they lose some energy by emitting photons via synchrotron radiation. Equation 2.1 describes this energy loss:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta E_{\mathrm{sync}} \sim \frac{E^{4}}{m^{4} r} \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

The radiative energy loss $\Delta E_{\text {sync }}$ is inversely proportional to the radius $r$ of the accelerator, the energy of the particle $E$ to the fourth power and its mass $m$ to the fourth power. As the electron mass is $\sim 1.8 \times 10^{3}$ smaller than the proton mass, the energy loss radiated by the electron is much higher than the energy loss radiated by the proton at the same centre-of-mass energy. To compensate the energy loss, a circular electron-positron accelerator should have an extremely large radius (larger than the actual LHC), increasing the cost to build the experiment. Another solution to compensate the synchrotron radiation inside a machine is to accelerate the particles in a linear collider. The centre-of-mass energy has to be reached after only passing once through the accelerator, whereas a bunch of particles in a circular collider is accelerated many times until the desired energy of collision is reached. The choice of a linear collider over a circular one comes also from the cost, which has a quadratic energy dependence for a circular one, whereas it follows a first power energy for a linear one [71]. To work at the same energy scale, a linear collider would require a larger number of accelerating cavities and would make a much bigger and more expensive collider than a circular one.

### 2.1.2 Future linear lepton collider

Since the 1980's, several linear collider technologies have been developed, leading, in the 1990's, to five major accelerator technologies: Superconducting Radio-Frequency (SRF), the Compact LInear Collider (CLIC) technology and three different normal-conducting technologies (S-band, C-band, and X-band) [25]. Different projects are under study for the next high-energy physics experiment. All the projects aim to perform precise measurements of the Higgs boson and test of the SM. CERN is preparing a electron/positron linear collider, called CLIC, with a nominal energy of 3 TeV . The accelerator will use radio-frequency structures and a two beam concept [14]. Another idea would be to develop a muon collider instead of an electron-positron collider [60]. Like the electron, the muon is a pointlike particle, therefore the centre-of-mass energy can be easily adjusted to any desired value. The muon mass is 207 times larger than the electron mass, which means that a muon beam would suffer less energy loss by synchrotron radiation. Hence, a muon circular collider could be feasible. However, the muon has a lifetime of only $2.2 \mu \mathrm{~s}$ making the accelerator design more challenging.

At the beginning of the 2000's, the International Committee for Future Accelerators (ICFA) has chosen, in 2004, the SRF technology [45] to build the ILC [46]. The technology developed for this future experiment is also used for the XFEL at Deutsches Elektronen-Synchrotron (DESY) in Hamburg.

The CLIC and muon colliders will not be further described in this thesis.

### 2.2 The ILC machine

The ILC should be the next lepton collider experiment and should be situated in Japan. In 2016, the physics community was waiting for an official decision of the Japanese government concerning the final experimental site. At the time when this thesis was written, the scientific community has chosen a site candidate in the north of Japan, in the region of Kitakami.

### 2.2.1 Baseline design

The ILC is planned to collide electrons and positrons at center-of-mass energies varying between 250 GeV and 500 GeV . The accelerator will be 31 kilometers long. An upgrade to reach the centre-of-mass energy of 1 TeV is envisaged, but the accelerator will have to be extended to achieve a total length of 50 kilometers. It is designed to generate a total of $500 \mathrm{fb}^{-1}$ of data


Figure 2.1 - Schematic layout of the International Linear Collider (ILC) [8].
during the first four years of operation. The luminosity will reach a peak of $2 \times 10^{34} \mathrm{~cm}^{-2} . \mathrm{s}^{-1}$ at $\sqrt{s}=500 \mathrm{GeV}$. Figure 2.1 shows a schematic layout of the ILC.

The main components of the ILC are presented in the following. First, an overview of the electron source and their acceleration via the conducting and superconducting structures is presented, then the role of the damping rings, the injection into the main linacs, followed by the positron source and the Beam Delivery System (BDS) are described. Finally, the interaction region (IR) is presented. A detailed description of the ILC can be found in the Technical Design Report [3].

### 2.2.2 Machine design and beam parameters

Polarised electrons are produced by a laser firing into strained GaAs photocathode using a direct-current (DC) gun. To provide redundancy, the electron generation system is made of two lasers and DC guns, providing bunches with a polarisation of $90 \%$. The electrons are then pre-accelerated to 76 MeV using non-superconducting accelerating structures. They are then injected into a 250 m long superconducting linac to reach the energy of 5 GeV . The dimension and density of the bunches are quite extended, thus their emittance is spread out. Before injecting the bunches into a damping ring, which
is used to decrease the emittance and reach the desired luminosity, superconducting solenoids rotate the spin vector into the vertical direction, while SRF cryomodules are used for an energy compression.

The damping ring has a 6.7 km circumference and is made of magnets and wrigglers that are going to force the particles trajectory to bend. This system is used to dump the electrons with large transverse and longitudinal emittance to the low emittance required for the luminosity production. The reduction of the emittance should be achieved within the available 200 ms between the machine pulses. Although the positron source was not yet introduced, their bunches suffer from the same problems as the electron ones. A second damping ring, placed in the same cavern as the electron one, is also tasked with getting the desired emittance.

The bunches are then extracted from the damping rings and transferred via the Ring To the Main Linac (RTML) structure, the longest continuous beam line at the ILC. It is divided into 5 subsystems to transport the bunches from the damping rings to the BDS. It orientates the beam to the desired polarisation by rotating the spin of the particle. The beam bunch length is compressed from several millimeters to a few hundred by using a twostage bunch compressor. While the bunches are compressed, sections of SRF accelerator cavities accelerate the bunches from 5 GeV up to 15 GeV . One of the challenges of the RTML is to preserve the emittance obtained after the damping rings, while the length and the energy of the bunches are tuned. Then, the particles are delivered to the main linac, an 11 km long accelerator using 1.3 GHz SRF cavities, made of niobium.

Before reaching the interaction region, the primary electron beam is transported through a 147 m superconducting helical undulator to produce photons from $\sim 10$ up to $\sim 30 \mathrm{MeV}$, depending on the energy of the primary beam. This primary beam is separated from the photons and sent back to the BDS with an energy loss of $\sim 3 \mathrm{GeV}$. The photons are directed onto a rotating Ti-alloy target to create $e^{+} e^{-}$pairs that are then separated. The positrons collected are accelerated to 125 MeV using a normal-conducting linac and then accelerated to 5 GeV with a superconducting boost linac. Finally, they are injected into the damping ring to reduce their emittance.

The two beams are transported from the high-energy linacs to the IR by the BDS. The latter focuses the beams to the sizes required to meet the desired luminosity. It is divided into 5 main subsystems. In the direction of the beam, a system is used to perform some emittance measurements and matching, to give trajectory feedback, and provide a polarimetry and energy diagnostic. Then, the beam is collimated to remove the beam-halo particles that would generate a huge amount of background in the detector. Muons
generated during the collimation process are deflected by magnetised iron shielding. As a next step, strong compact quadrupoles focus the beam to the sizes required to meet the desired luminosity. Before the collisions, crab cavities rotate the bunches in the horizontal plane for effective collisions and to achieve a 14 mrad total crossing angle. After the collisions, an extraction line is dedicated to transport the beams into the main beam dump.

Although two experiments will run at the ILC, there will be only one interaction region due to cost. To have two experiments running at the same time, it requires two separate BDS of 4 km long each. Thanks to a push-pull scheme, the detectors will work alternatively: while one is taking data, the other one is waiting in the close-by maintenance position. The two detectors will be presented in more details in section 2.3.


Figure 2.2 - Schematic view of the bunch structure at the ILC. One bunch train is made of 1312 bunches and lasts 1 ms long. Each bunch crossing is spaced out by 760 ns . Two bunch trains are 199 ms apart from each other [59].

The accelerator described above will create bunch trains at a repetition rate of 5 Hz . Each train is composed of 1312 bunches that contain $2 \times 10^{10}$ particles and lasts 1 ms long. The interval between two trains is 199 ms long. This structure is a key feature to develop detectors able to be switched off during the dead time in order to reduce the power consumption.

### 2.2.3 Beam backgrounds

To design the detectors of the ILC, the backgrounds must be understood and taken into account to give optimal performances. The event reconstruction becomes more complicated with hits caused by background particles. There are two kinds of background: the one created by the BDS, and the one related to the interaction point. As it was discussed in subsection 2.2.2, the collimator is placed close to the interaction point (IP) to remove the beam halo, that can produce muons by an electromagnetic shower. To sweep them away, iron spoilers are used to create a magnetic field and deflect the muons.

A side effect is to increase the number of neutrons created in photo-nuclear reactions. A concrete wall placed at the entrance of the experimental hall reduces the neutron background.

Contrary to the LHC, the ILC will not suffer from QCD background, as mentioned in section 2.1.1. Nevertheless, due to the nature of electrons and positrons, the two beams will interact with each other before they collide. The electromagnetic beam field of each bunch is high and causes the focusing of the opposite bunch. It is bending the electron/positron trajectories near the IP. On the one hand, this effect helps to focus the incoming beams and enhance the luminosity. On the other hand, as the charged particles have bending a track, they are emitting hard photons via beamstrahlung, creating $e^{+} e^{-}$pairs background. The hard photon is strongly focused in the forward region and do not contribute strongly to the background in the detector. However, the $e^{+} e^{-}$pairs created contribute to the background directly or through backscattered particles. As a consequence of the beamstrahlung, the beam particle energy is reduced, hence the collisions occur at different energies from the nominal one and this affects the physics cross-section. The beamstrahlung photons can also produce neutrons by hitting components. The other source of hard photons is the initial state radiation. With the beamstrahlung, they contribute reducing the peak luminosity [62].

Different kinds of soft pairs background can be expected at the ILC: the coherent and incoherent pair production. The coherent pair production appears when beamstrahlung photons are interacting with the strong electromagnetic field of the beams. In the ILC environment the coherent pair background is negligible, whereas the incoherent pair production is dominant. It corresponds to $e^{+} e^{-}$pairs created by the interaction of only two particles. There are three types of incoherent pair production, depending on the nature of the scattered photon which creates the $e^{+} e^{-}$pairs. The Bethe-Heitler process corresponds to the scattering of one real photon while the second one is virtual. This process contributes to $\sim \frac{2}{3}$ of the pair creation. The second process is the Landau-Lifshitz, where the two scattered photons are virtual. This process contributes to $\sim \frac{1}{3}$ of the pair creation. The last production occurred via two real photons (Breit-Wheeler process) and contribute only to a percent level. The incoherent $e^{+} e^{-}$pairs are produced at a relatively low transverse momentum and are emitted in the forward direction.

### 2.3 The ILC detector concepts

### 2.3.1 Overview of the two experiments


(a) The Silicon Detector

(b) The International Large Detector

Figure 2.3 - Overview of the two detectors designs at the ILC. Fgure (a) represents the SiD design while figure (b) shows the ILD approach [9].

As it was presented in section 2.2.2, the ILC will be built with only one interaction region due to cost, whereas two detectors are foreseen. The pushpull operation scheme will allow for data taking of one detector, while the second one is out of the beam in a close-by cavern for upgrade, repair and simple parking. The interval to switch the detectors should be short enough and of the order of one or two days. This time efficient implementation sets specific requirements for the beam structure but also for the detector design. The detectors should be placed on platforms to preserve the alignment and
to distribute the load equally onto the floor. Another requirement of the detector design is that the magnetic fields outside the iron return yokes must be small enough to not disturb the second detector in the parking position. It is assumed that a limit of 5 mT at a lateral distance from the beam line should be sufficient.

The motivation to build two detectors with a different approach is mainly to provide a cross-check and a confirmation of results and complementary strengths. Both detectors are optimised to study a broad range of precision measurements and search of new physics driven by the ILC expectations. Their performances are driven by the Particle Flow Algorithm (PFA) to be able to measure the final states of events with high accuracy. To do so, both detectors should have a high hermeticity, high granularity calorimeters and excellent tracking and vertexing. The PFA is shortly presented in subsection 2.3.2.

The Silicon Detector (SiD) is a compact detector made of a silicon tracker and 5 T magnetic field. The tracking system provides robust performance thanks to the time-stamping on single bunch crossings. The calorimeters are highly granular to perform the PFA.

The second detector is International Large Detector (ILD). In contrast to the SiD, the tracking system is based on a continuous readout Time-Projection-Chamber (TPC) surrounded by silicon tracking detectors. The magnetic field will be only 3.5 T combined with granular calorimeters for a good particle-flow reconstruction

### 2.3.2 Particle Flow Algorithm

The main purpose of the ILC (or CLIC) is to achieve precise measurements of physics processes that produce final states with multiple jets. The jet energy resolution at the ILC should be sufficient to cleanly separate $W$ and $Z$ hadronic decays. Typically, the jet energy resolution is deduced from equation 2.2 , where $\alpha$ is the stochastic term usually greater than $\sim$ $60 \% / \sqrt{E(\mathrm{GeV})}$.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\sigma_{E}}{E} \simeq \frac{\alpha}{\sqrt{E(G e V)}} \oplus \beta . \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

The PFA approach is the extended version of the Energy Flow approach (used at H1) for a highly granular detector. The goal of this framework is to achieve a stochastic term for the energy resolution larger than $30 \% / \sqrt{E(G e V)}$,
not reachable with a traditional calorimeter. Each sub-detector should be efficient enough to separate and to reconstruct the four-vector of all visible particles in an event. The energy of charged particle is measured in the tracking detectors, while the energy measurements for photons are performed in the electromagnetic calorimeter and neutral hadrons in the hadron calorimeter.


Figure 2.4 - Two different approaches for calorimetry. On the left is the traditional calorimetry method used on most of the experiments, the right one is the particle flow approach for calorimetry. The particle track is taken into account to calculate the jet energy [41].

The PFA requirements drive the design of the detectors at the ILC. For both experiments, the electromagnetic and hadronic calorimeter have to be located inside the solenoid. Moreover, each sub-detector must be able to distinguish single particle signals, imposing a better tracking precision and higher granularity calorimeters than the traditional detectors in high energy physics.

### 2.3.3 The ILD detector

The design of ILD follows the requirements for optimal PFA performance. In summary, the detector should be highly granular to have a robust threedimensional imaging capability. It will combine a high-precision Vertex Detector (VXD) system, a hybrid tracking system and calorimeters inside a 3.5 T solenoid. On the outside, a coil and iron return yoke will be instrumented as a muon system and a tail catcher. Figure 2.5 represents the different parts of the detector.

The ILD system coordinate is as following: the Cartesian coordinate system, where $x$ and $y$ are the horizontal and vertical coordinates respectively, in the plane transverse to the beam line, while $z$ is along the beam line. For


Figure 2.5 - Quadrant view of the ILD detector concept with its subdetector system [9].
the spherical coordinate system, $r$ is the distance from the beam line, $\theta$ the track polar angle and $\phi$ the azimuthal angle. The third coordinate system is the cylindrical one. In this system, $r$ is the distance from the beam line, $\phi$ the azimuthal angle and $z$ the coordinate along the beam line.

## Vertex detector

The VXD is the closest detector to the interaction region and is used to measure particles' tracks and to reconstruct the decay vertices of the particles. For the moment, two vertex detector designs are under study, but both of them have a pure barrel geometry. One geometry is made of five single sided layers, whereas the other one has three double-sided detection layers. Chapter 4 will introduce in more detail the vertex detector requirements for the ILD and the different design proposals.

## Tracking

The main tracking system for the ILD is performed by the TPC. It is a gaseous detector with a low material budget designed to measure the particles' trajectory. When a particle traverses through the TPC, it ionises the gas, creating electrons that drift to the anode due to a high voltage. The anode is the part where the readout plates are installed, which provides a 3D position of the particles tracks thanks to the wires and the anode (give $\mathrm{x}-\mathrm{y}$ ) and the z coordinate is given by the drifting time. In addition to the exact position measurement, this detector is also able to measure the energy deposited by the particle, which can be used for particle identification.

The requirements to design a TPC at the ILC are given by two main values:

- The single point resolution $\sigma_{\text {s.p. }}$ which should be lower than $100 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ in the $r \phi$ direction and less than $500 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ in the z direction;
- The minimum distance to separate two hits which should be lower than 2 mm .

The TPC envisioned for ILD consists of a central barrel part, with an inner radius of $\simeq 33 \mathrm{~cm}$ and a outer radius of $\simeq 180 \mathrm{~cm}$ and two endcaps with a detection area of $10 \mathrm{~m}^{2}$. The solid angle coverage is up to $|\cos \theta \simeq 0.98|$. The barrel will be filled with a gas mixture called T2K (3 \% of Ar-CF4 and $2 \%$ of isobutane). Due to the low material budget and the ability to cope with a high magnetic field, the TPC is compliant with the PFA (see subsection 2.3.2).

To improve the track reconstruction, the TPC is surrounded by highly granular silicon detectors: two barrel components, the Silicon Internal Tracker (SIT) and the Silicon External Tracking (SET); an end-cap component, the End-cap Tracking Detector (ETD) and the Forward Tracking Detector (FTD). The SIT provides tracking between the VXD and the TPC, whereas the SET gives an entry point to the Electromagnetic CALorimeter (ECAL) after the TPC. Both systems provide precise space points and improve the overall momentum resolution. The goal of the SIT is to improve the momentum resolution, the reconstruction of low $p_{T}$ charged particles and the reconstruction of long-lived particles. The coupling of the SIT and SET also provide a time-stamping information.

The ETD is located within the gap separating the TPC and the endcap calorimeter. It improves the momentum resolution for charged tracks with
a reduced path in the TPC. It also reduces the effect of the material of the TPC end-plate. The material budget of this end-plate is estimated to $15 \%$ of $\mathrm{X}_{0}$.

As the TPC does not provide any coverage in the forward region, seven silicon disks ensure efficient and precise tracking down to very small angles, whereas the ETD and the FTD make sure to get a full tracking hermeticity.

To simplify the system layout and the maintenance, the SIT, SET and ETD are made of single-sided strip layers tilted by a small angle with respect to each other. They are placed in so-called false double-sided layers. The SIT has two layers of microstrip, instead of one layer for the SET. The technology studied is microstrip sensors with an area of $10 \times 10 \mathrm{~cm}^{2}$, with a pitch of $50 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ and a thickness of $200 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. The dead area of the sensors will be reduced down to few microns instead of $100 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. The spatial point resolution aimed for this detector is $\sim 7.0 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ in the $r \phi$ direction. The table 2.1 gives the single point resolution aimed, as well as the angular coverage and the material budget.

| Detector | Geometry |  |  | Resolution $(\mu \mathrm{m})$ | Material <br> budget <br> layer <br> la |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | $\mathrm{R}(\mathrm{mm})$ | $\mathrm{Z}(\mathrm{mm})$ | $\cos \theta$ |  | 0.65 |
| SIT | 153 | 368 | 0.91 | $\sigma_{R-\phi}=7.0$ | $\sigma_{Z}=50.0$ |
| SET | 300 | 644 | 0.79 | $\sigma_{R}=7.0$ | 0.65 |
| ETD | 41911 | 2350 | $0.2-$ | 2420 | $0.799-0.985$ |
|  | 1822.7 |  |  | $\sigma_{X}=7.0$ | 0.65 |
|  | $39-134$ | 220 | $0.985-0.802$ |  |  |
|  | $49.6-164$ | 371.3 | $0.991-0.914$ | $\sigma_{R-\phi}=3-6$ | $0.25-0.5$ |
| FTD | $70.1-308$ | 644.9 | $0.994-0.902$ |  |  |
|  | $100.3-309$ | 1046.1 | $0.994-0.959$ |  |  |
|  | $130.4-309$ | 1447.3 | $0.995-0.998$ | $\sigma_{R-\phi}=7.0$ | 0.65 |
|  | $160.5-309$ | 1848.5 | $0.996-0.986$ | $\sigma_{R-1}$ |  |
|  | $190.5-309$ | 2250 | $0.996-0.990$ |  |  |

Table 2.1 - Summary of parameters aimed for the silicon tracker using micro-strips sensors. These detectors are complementary to the TPC and the vertex detector.

The FTD is placed in the forward direction, between the beam pipe and the inner field cage of the TPC, where the magnetic field becomes less and less useful to bend charged tracks and so the determination of a precise momentum is more difficult. It consists of seven tracking disks: the first two
are pixel detectors to cope with expected high occupancies and the five others are strip detectors. The pointing resolution will vary between $3.0-6.0 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ for the two first layers and $7.0 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ for the five other ones.

## Calorimeters

The calorimeters design is driven by the particle flow requirements. Each particle must be reconstructed individually in the detector with a jet energy measurement equal to:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\Delta E}{E}=30 \% / \sqrt{\frac{E}{G e V}} . \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The energy resolution obtained in equation 2.3 is obtained by using a combination of information from the tracking system and the calorimeters. The choice of technology used for the calorimeter will be determined by the pattern recognition performance. One of the ILD detector's goal is, for example, to be able to get a jet energy resolution sufficient to clean separate W and Z hadronic decays.

The average jet energy distribution is roughly:

- $62 \%$ are charged particles (mainly hadrons)
- $27 \%$ are $\gamma$
- $10 \%$ are long-lived neutral hadrons
- $1.5 \%$ are $\nu$

The ECAL is the first calorimeter directly after the tracking system. Its role is to identify photons and leptons and to measure their energy, nevertheless, it is also the first section to develop the hadron showers. The fine segmentation makes an important contribution to hadron-hadron jet separation. For the ILD, a compromise between the performance and the cost has led to a sampling calorimeter realised with tungsten absorber. There are three options under study for the active area. The first one called SiWECAL, is made of silicon pin diodes with a pitch of $5 \times 5 \mathrm{~mm}^{2}$. It has the advantage to cover a large area, to be reliable and simple to operate, to have thin readout layers and can be operated in 3.5 T magnetic field. The second option is made of scintillator strips readout by photo-sensors and is called ScECAL. It has an active area of $5 \times 45 \mathrm{~mm}^{2}$ arranged in alternative directions to achieve an effective granularity of $5 \times 5 \mathrm{~mm}^{2}$. Some alternatives are
also thought, like the Micromegas chambers. Nevertheless, this technology is less advanced compared to the others. One other good candidate could be the use of Monolithic Active Pixel Sensor (MAPS) sensors. They have the advantage of housing the signal sensing and processing on the same substrate and by choosing standard CMOS processes, the cost of fabrication would be reduced.

The Hadronic CALorimeter (HCAL) has the role to separate the deposited energy of charged and neutral hadrons and to precisely measure the energy deposited. It is also a sampling calorimeter using stainless steel instead of tungsten as an absorber. The rigidity of stainless steel makes it possible to get a self-supporting structure limiting the dead areas. Two baseline technologies for the active medium area are studied. The Analogue HCAL (AHCAL) is made of scintillator tiles, whereas the semi-digital, called Glass Resistive Plate Chamber (GRPC), is based on the Semi-Digital HCAL (SDHCAL).

In order to monitor the luminosity and the beamstrahlung, the calorimeter system is completed in the very forward region by three different subsystems covering very small angles also for neutral hadrons: the LumiCal, the BeamCAL, and the Low angle Hadron CALorimeter (LHCAL). The LumiCAL is placed in a circular hole of the end-cap ECAL and covers polar angles between 31 and 77 mrad . It serves as a luminosity monitor by measuring the Bhabha scattering $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow e^{+} e^{-}$via emission of virtual $\gamma$. The luminosity $\mathcal{L}$ is determined by measuring the ratio of the number of counted events $N_{B}$ in a considered polar angle range and the integral of the differential cross-section $\sigma_{B}$ in the same region. The measurement precision should be better than $10^{-3}$ at 500 GeV . After each bunch crossing, the beamstrahlung pairs hit the BeamCal. This would permit to get an estimation of the bunch-by-bunch luminosity, but also to determine the beam parameters. It is placed in front of the final focus quadrupole and covers polar angles between 5 and 40 mrad .

## Magnetic field and yoke

By applying a high magnetic field inside the detector, the charged particles have a bent track helping with the identification and the energy measurement. At the ILD, the nominal magnetic field is 3.5 T and should have a high homogeneity inside the TPC. Moreover, as mentioned in subsection 2.2.2, the magnetic field beyond the coil has to be reduced to avoid any perturbations with the second detector in its parking position. A superconducting coil surrounding the tracking and calorimetric system generate the magnetic field. It has a diameter of 6.88 m , a length of 7.35 m and is made of three modules.

Surrounding the coil, an iron yoke returns the magnetic flux. It is constituted by a barrel of 2.88 m thickness and 2 end-caps of 2.12 m thickness. Muon detectors are inserted inside the iron yoke in a sandwich-like structure. They are performing measurements on muons but they are also used as tail catchers, to improve the energy resolution of highly energetic jets escaping the calorimeters.

### 2.4 Conclusions

The pros and cons of a linear collider using a electron/positron beam have been discussed. The main advantage of this type of collider is to precisely know the initial collision state and to avoid any QCD background contamination. Thus, precise measurements of the Higgs boson, such as a fine determination of its mass, its width and its couplings could be performed. Contrary to the LHC, which is using the tunnel built for Large Electron Positron collider (LEP), the ILC will be built on a new site. The tunnel, the accelerator, the detectors and the scientific campus have to be built. To reduce the costs, only one interaction region is planned, on which two detectors are going to be operated alternately. The design of these detectors is driven by the particle flow approach, which sets an energy resolution of $30 \% / \sqrt{E(\mathrm{GeV})}$ for the calorimeters. The ILD detector concept was introduced and the different sub-detectors and technology options were discussed, except for the vertex detector. The chapter 4 is dedicated to the vertex detector at the ILD.

After describing the status of the SM and the next high-energy experiment, the next chapter will introduce the physics cases at the ILC, especially by describing an approach of a physics analysis to study the $H \rightarrow c \bar{c}$.

## Chapter 3

## Analysis of the finale state $H \nu \bar{\nu}$


#### Abstract

In chapter 1, the framework of particle physics was described. Since the beginning of high-energy physics, different experiments have confirmed the validity of the Standard Model (SM) and search for new phenomena beyond the SM. Depending on the type of colliders used, the measurements do not achieve the same precision. For example, the LHC with its high luminosity and high energy beam, is able to reach new energy scales, whereas the ILC with its electron/positron interaction at lower energy beam is able to perform more precise measurements, due to the known initial state and the QCD free background. In this chapter, the physics scenarios that are scheduled at the ILC are discussed. Afterwards, the emphasis will be on Higgs physics and the measurement planned at the ILC. The last section aims to introduce a physics analysis in which, the processes leading to a Higgs boson and two neutrinos in the final state is studied.


## Contents

$$
\text { 3.1 Modes of operation of the ILC . . . . . . . . . . . } 44
$$

3.2 Higgs boson physics ..... 45
3.2.1 Production of the Higgs SM boson at the ILC ..... 46
3.2.2 Higgs boson studies ..... 46
3.3 Analysis of simulated data ..... 52
3.3.1 Simulation set-up ..... 52
3.3.2 Event generation ..... 53
3.4 Results ..... 57
3.4.1 Event reconstruction ..... 57
3.4.2 Event selection ..... 58
3.5 Outlook ..... 59

### 3.1 Modes of operation of the ILC

As seen in chapter 2, the ILC will have a tunable centre-of-mass energy. Due to the features of an $e^{-} e^{+}$collider, there is no contribution from strong interaction background and the initial state of collision is well defined, contrary to the LHC. Moreover, the electroweak background is calculable and controlled. All the conditions gather together allow to perform precise physics measurements and to look for an evidence of new physics beyond the SM. The different measurements which will be performed are presented below.

At the centre-of-mass energy of $\sqrt{s}=250 \mathrm{GeV}$, studies of the Higgs boson couplings to SM particles will be performed, as well as measurements of the quantum numbers of this boson. The main Higgs boson production process at this energy is Higgs-strahlung (see 3.1a). The measurements could be performed using the recoil mass method independently of the Higgs boson decay products. The recoil mass technique is explained in section 3.2.2.

Then, for a centre-of-mass energy between 350 and 400 GeV , the cross section of the $W W$-fusion process is larger than at 250 GeV . This channel offers the possibility to measure the couplings of the Higgs boson to the $W$ boson, as well as the study of some rare decays. This energy range corresponds also to the threshold of the top quark pair production. A technique, called a threshold scan, that consists in varying the energy of the beam around the threshold production $\left(\sqrt{s} \simeq 2 M_{t}\right)$, will be used to measure the top quark mass with a precision of $100 \mathrm{MeV} / \mathrm{c}^{2}$.

The nominal energy of the ILC is achieved at $\sqrt{s}=500 \mathrm{GeV}$. This energy scale is suitable to look for supersymmetric candidates and possible extended states of the Higgs boson.

An upgrade of the ILC to reach the centre-of-mass energy $\sqrt{s}=1 \mathrm{TeV}$ is also scheduled. Up to 1 TeV , different measurements are accessible, such as the coupling of the Higgs boson to the top quark, the Higgs boson selfcoupling, or its compositeness. Also, the search for new exotic particles and physics beyond the SM is possible.

Another possible option for the ILC is to perform more precise measurements of the $Z$ and $W$ bosons. At the centre-of-mass energy of $\sqrt{s}=91 \mathrm{GeV}$, the program Giga $Z$ will be able to collect more $Z$ boson events than LEP did. The luminosity of the ILC will be two to three times higher than what
was achieved in the past. At the $Z$ resonance, the data collected will allow for studying the asymmetries of the $Z$ boson couplings. The Mega $W$ program will be performed at the centre-of-mass energy of $\sqrt{s}=160 \mathrm{GeV}$ reaching the $W W$ production threshold and will try to measure the $W$ boson mass with a precision of $\mathrm{MeV} / \mathrm{c}^{2}$. At higher energy, it will also be possible to measure the $W$ boson couplings more precisely.

Table 3.1 summarises the different physics programs at the ILC for the different energy scheduled.

| Energy (GeV) | Reaction | Physics Goal |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 91 | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow$ Z | ultra-precision electroweak |
| 160 | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow W W$ | ultra-precision $W$ mass |
| 250 | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow Z h$ | precision Higgs boson couplings |
| 400 | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow t \bar{t}$ | top quark mass and couplings |
|  | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow W W$ | precision $W$ couplings |
|  | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow \nu \bar{\nu} h$ | precision Higgs boson couplings |
|  | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow f \bar{f}$ | precision search for $Z^{\prime}$ |
| 500 | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow t \bar{t} h$ | Higgs boson coupling to top |
|  | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow Z h h$ | Higgs boson self-coupling |
|  | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow A H, H^{-} \rightarrow \tilde{\chi}$ | search for supersymmetry |
|  | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow \nu \bar{\nu} h h$ | search for extended Higgs boson states |
| $700-1000$ | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow \nu \bar{\nu} V V$ | Higgs boson self-coupling |
|  | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow \nu \bar{\nu} t \bar{t}$ | composite Higgs boson sector |
|  | $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow \tilde{t t^{*}}$ | composite boson Higgs and top |
|  |  | search for supersymmetry |

Table 3.1 - Summary of the major processes that will be studied at the ILC at different energies [5].

### 3.2 Higgs boson physics

The LHC has permitted to discover the Higgs boson and the mass of the Higgs boson measured is $M_{H}=125.7 \pm 0.4 \mathrm{GeV}$ [68]. The Higgs boson found at the LHC has to be characterised more precisely. One of the goals at the ILC is to determine if the particle found is compatible with the one defined by the SM, or if other states exist. Measuring the Higgs boson couplings to the SM particles is one of the keys for verifying the exactness of the mass generation mechanism. The production, the decay modes of the Higgs boson, as well as the feasible measurements are presented below in the case of the ILC.

### 3.2.1 Production of the Higgs SM boson at the ILC

The production of the Higgs boson defined by the SM is done via three major processes: Higgs-strahlung (see figure 3.1a), $W W$-fusion (see figure 3.1b) and ZZ-fusion (see figure 3.1c) [4].

$$
\begin{gathered}
\text { Higgs-strahlung: } e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow Z H \rightarrow f \bar{f} X, \\
W W \text {-fusion: } e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow \nu_{e} \overline{\nu_{e}} W^{+} W^{-} \rightarrow \nu_{e} \overline{\nu_{e}} H, \\
Z Z \text {-fusion: } e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow e^{+} e^{-} Z Z \rightarrow e^{+} e^{-} H .
\end{gathered}
$$

At the centre-of-mass energy $\sqrt{s}=250 \mathrm{GeV}$, Higgs-strahlung is the dominant process. Its cross-section falls off as $1 / \mathrm{s}$ as the centre-of-mass energy $\sqrt{s}$ increases. Contrary to Higgs-strahlung, $W W$-fusion and $Z Z$-fusion are t-channel processes which have a cross-section growing logarithmically with the centre-of-mass energy. Thus, at 250 GeV , the cross-section of $W W$-fusion is one order smaller than Higgs-strahlung and $Z Z$-fusion is negligible. Nevertheless, around $500 \mathrm{GeV}, W W$-fusion and Higgs-strahlung have the same cross-section, which is around 120 fb . Figure 3.2 shows the cross-sections production of the Higgs boson for different centre-of-mass energies at the ILC.

(a) Higgs-strahlung

(b) $W W$-fusion

(c) ZZ-fusion

Figure 3.1 - Feynman diagrams of the main Higgs production at the ILC [4][79].
$W W$-fusion occurs only with left-handed electrons and with right-handed positrons. Thus, by modifying the beam polarisation, the signal mixture can be changed, as well as the background processes.

### 3.2.2 Higgs boson studies

Determining the properties of the Higgs boson will help physicists to understand the mass generation mechanism of the SM particles. In the following


Figure 3.2 - The production cross-section of the Higgs boson with a mass of 125 GeV [4].
section, different results obtained at the LHC, as well as the branching ratios measurement that will be done at the ILC, are presented.

The ILC will do all measurements already done by the LHC (mass, spin, branching ratio) but the ILC will perform model-independent measurement.

## Mass measurement

In the case of the ILC, this measurement will be performed at the peak production of Higgs-strahlung. The well defined four-momentum initial state allows the measurement of the Higgs boson mass without looking at the Higgs decay at all. This method gives a way to determine the total width of the Higgs boson and the absolute normalisation of the Higgs couplings. Moreover, decays of Higgs to invisible or exotic particles could be studied. The Higgs boson invariant mass $M_{H}$ can be calculated by using the recoil technique:

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{H}^{2}=s+M_{Z}^{2}-2 \sqrt{s}\left(E_{1}+E_{2}\right), \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $M_{Z}$ is the mass of the $Z$ boson and $E_{1}$ and $E_{2}$ are the energies of the $Z$ decay products. This technique works well for the $Z$ boson decaying into leptons at the centre-of-mass energy $\sqrt{s}=250 \mathrm{GeV}$. However, this method can not be performed for a Higgs boson decaying into quarks at the same energy. The $Z$ and the Higgs bosons are produced almost at rest, thus, the identification of the jets coming from the $Z$ boson to the ones coming from the Higgs boson is more difficult. Nevertheless, at higher energy $(\sqrt{s}=500 \mathrm{GeV})$, the two bosons are boosted enough to separate their jets and then to reapply the recoil mass technique. Depending on the decay channel of the $Z$ boson, the statistical precision on the mass measurement varies between 40 MeV (for $Z \rightarrow \mu^{+} \mu^{-}$) to 80 MeV (for $Z \rightarrow e^{+} e^{-}$) and can reach 32 MeV by combining the two results.


Figure 3.3 - Recoil mass distribution for the Higgs-strahlung process, in which $Z$ boson is decaying into two muons, for $M_{H}=125 \mathrm{GeV}$ with $250 \mathrm{fb}^{-1}$ at $\sqrt{s}=250 \mathrm{GeV}[58]$.

Figure 3.3 presents the expected recoil mass distribution for a Higgs with a mass $M_{H}=125 \mathrm{GeV}$ with $250 \mathrm{fb}^{-1}$ at $\sqrt{s}=250 \mathrm{GeV}$.

## Spin measurement

Besides the mass measurement of the Higgs boson, which will be done at the centre-of-mass energy $\sqrt{s}=250 \mathrm{GeV}$, studies will be performed to determine the Higgs boson spin and its CP parity. The threshold behavior of the $Z h$ cross-section has a characteristic shape for each spin and each possible CP parity. If the cross-section follows $s$ (the centre-of-mass energy), then the Higgs boson has a spin- 0 and is CP-even, whereas a $\sqrt{s}^{3}$ dependency indicates a CP-odd Higgs boson. From the LHC analysis, it has been determined that a spin-1 Higgs boson is disfavored because of the di-photon channel observation [78]. Figure 3.4 [29] shows the behavior of the cross-section of the Higgs-strahlung at the threshold production depending on the spin and the CP values.


Figure 3.4 - Behavior of the cross-section of the Higgs-strahlung at the threshold production, depending on the spin and the CP values. These three plots show the theoretical behavior of the cross-section at the threshold production for $J^{P}=0^{+}, 1^{-}$and $2^{+}$and for a Higgs boson mass of 120 GeV [29].

## Branching ratio measurement

To identify the nature of the Higgs boson discovered at the LHC, the Higgs boson rate measurements has to be compared to the expectations of the SM. The rate production and decay process of the Higgs boson is proportional to the cross-section for Higgs production multiplied by the branching ratio (BR), which is related to the partial width into the observed channel.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{BR}(\mathrm{H} \rightarrow \mathrm{~A} \overline{\mathrm{~A}})=\Gamma(\mathrm{H} \rightarrow \mathrm{~A} \overline{\mathrm{~A}}) / \Gamma_{\mathrm{H}}, \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Gamma_{H}$ is the total rate of Higgs decay or the total width of the Higgs boson as a resonance. $\Gamma_{H}$ is very small in the SM and its measurement as a resonance is challenging. At the LHC , the determination of $\Gamma_{H}$ to high-accuracy requires model-dependent assumptions, whereas the Higgsstrahlung channel at the ILC offers the possibility of using the recoiling $Z$ boson to measure certain Higgs couplings directly. As $\Gamma_{H}$ measurement is done in model-independent assumptions, it fixes the absolute size of all other Higgs couplings.


Figure 3.5 - Projected Higgs couplings using the model-dependent fit [36].

Figure 3.5 compares the uncertainties in Higgs couplings expected from the High-Luminosity LHC and from the different phases of the ILC. The LHC experiments cannot measure all Higgs decay modes. The determination of the Higgs width $\Gamma_{H}$ cannot be made with a model-independent method, contrary to the ILC. The green bars are the expectation for the CMS experiment and the yellow and red bars are the expectation for the ILC. The measurement of the Higgs coupling will be improved at the ILC to reach a precision below $3 \%$ for all channels, expect for the $\gamma \gamma$ channel. As it can be seen in figure 3.6 representing the Higgs boson branching ratio, the decay of the Higgs boson to $\gamma \gamma$ has a BR of $0.2 \%$ in the SM, making difficult for the ILC to obtain large statistics. Nonetheless, the LHC is expected to measure the ratio of $\mathrm{BR}(\mathrm{H} \rightarrow \gamma \gamma) / \mathrm{rmBR}(\mathrm{H} \rightarrow \mathrm{ZZ})$ very accurately. The combination of the ILC and LHC measurement will allow to reach the required $1 \%$-level for the $\gamma \gamma$ coupling [36].


Figure 3.6 - The Higgs boson branching ratio with the branching ratio uncertainties for the Higgs boson mass varying from 80 to 200 GeV [23].

One particularly interesting channel is $H \rightarrow c \bar{c}$, which will constraint the parameters to build detectors, specifically the vertex detector. This measurement is also interesting because $c$-quark is an up-type quark that can be seen distinctly from down-type quarks. Figure 3.7 depicts the mass-coupling relation of the Higgs boson to the particles of the SM. Any deviations from the Higgs boson fermionic coupling would indicate multiple Higgs boson states, meaning that the Higgs boson discovered is not compatible with the one defined by the SM.


Figure 3.7 - Mass-coupling relation of the Higgs boson to the particles defined in the standard model [79].

### 3.3 Analysis of simulated data

The following section is dedicated to the analysis of simulated data of the ILC. The goal of the analysis is to perform a study of the Higgs boson production at the center-of-mass energy $\sqrt{s}=350 \mathrm{GeV}$ for a luminosity of $250 \mathrm{fb}^{-1}$. Nevertheless, due to the restricted time to conduct this thesis, this section introduces the tools and some results of the analysis.

### 3.3.1 Simulation set-up

The physics events are generated with Monte-Carlo simulation tools and are performed with different software. The collision of electrons and positrons is done with the software WHIZARD [81]. This software is able to generate SM processes, as well as a large variety of Beyond Standard Model (BSM) models. For linear collider physics, the beamstrahlung, the Initial State Radiation (ISR) and the beam polarisation are simulated, but the hadronisation and fragmentation are not implemented and the simulation of those events was performed with PYTHIA [70].

The linear collider community has developed Monte-Carlo simulation and analysis software frameworks dedicated to a future linear collider, such as the ILC. The different packages developed by the community are grouped into
the ILCSoft framework [47]. It includes software for Monte-Carlo simulation, as well as software for test beam analysis (see chapter 7) and other tools. The main package is the Linear Collider I/O (LCIO), a persistence framework and event data model for linear collider detector studies [56]. It provides a common data format and event data model for both the simulation studies and the analysis framework in order to share results and compare reconstruction algorithms.

The physics events are generated, the interactions between particles and detector material are simulated with Mokka [65]. The software is based on the GEANT4 simulation toolkit [38] and is part of ILCSoft. For the analysis, the detector model used is ILD_o1_v05. This model simulates the dead areas due to cabling, cooling system and mechanical structure and has a silicon-tungsten electromagnetic calorimeter, as well as an analog hadronic calorimeter.

The detector geometry is described by an XML steering file and is used during the data reconstruction and the analysis. This is managed by the GEometry Api for Reconstruction (GEAR) software [39].

Finally, the events are reconstructed with the Modular Analysis and Reconstruction for the LINear collider (Marlin) package [24]. It is a C++ software framework used for the data reconstruction and data analysis and it handles LCIO data format. The different steps of the analysis or the reconstruction are grouped into modules, also called processors that read an input file, perform the defined tasks and write an output file that could be processed by another Marlin module. A steering file written in XML is used to select the processors to use and the order of their execution.

### 3.3.2 Event generation

## Event samples

The ILD generator group has produced signal and background samples for two different polarisations: $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(-1,+1)$ and $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(+1,-1)$. Since the planned polarisations are $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(-0.8,+0.3)$ and $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(+0.8,-0.3)$, the simulated beam polarisation is re-weighted according to:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\sigma_{\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}} & = \\
\sigma_{-0.8,+0.3} & =  \tag{3.3}\\
\sigma_{+0.8,-0.3} & =
\end{array}
$$

The cross-section $\sigma_{L R}$ is for the polarisation $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(-1,+1)$, whereas $\sigma_{R L}$ is the cross-section of the polarisation $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(+1,-1)$. The Higgsstrahlung and the $W W$-fusion processes are equally important for the beam polarisation $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(-0.8,+0.3)$, leading to a larger $\nu \bar{\nu} H$ cross-section. The polarisation $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(-0.8,+0.3)$ is used to perform a cross-check measurement. The $W$-boson cannot couple to right-handed electrons and lefthanded positrons. Thus, the $W W$-fusion process is largely suppressed. In addition, the $Z$-boson depends on the isospin and the Higgs-strahlung contribution is also reduced. The same effect occurs on the backgrounds leading to a smaller background contamination of the signal and a cleaner signal sample for Higgs-strahlung.

The data set is scaled to an integrated luminosity of $250 \mathrm{fb}^{-1}$ for each beam polarisation.

## Signal

The signal to study is the final state $\nu \bar{\nu} H$, where the Higgs boson decays into a pair of quarks, such as $H \rightarrow b \bar{b}$ and $H \rightarrow c \bar{c}$, or a pair of gluons $H \rightarrow g g$. The other decay modes are considered background. The dominant production processes leading to this final state are Higgs-strahlung and $W W$ fusion. Their leading order Feynman diagrams are displayed respectively on figure 3.1a and 3.1b. The neutrinos produced in $W W$-fusion process are only $\nu_{\mathrm{e}}$ and all neutrino flavors are equi-probable in Higgs-strahlung, the neutrino flavor cannot be detected and only missing energy is the signature of neutrino production.

Figure 3.8 represents the distribution of the missing mass for the signal events for the two polarisations considered at the ILC. For the other polarisation, the missing mass distribution shows three peaks. Once centered around 90 GeV corresponding to the decay of the Z-boson into a pair of neutrinos. The second peak is broader and its maximum is at 200 GeV . This comes from $W W$-fusion. A third peak is visible at 300 GeV and is coming from the Higgs boson decaying leptonically and is considered as a source of background.

## Background processes

The signal hypothesis is that the final state consists of two jets coming from the hadronic decay of the Higgs boson, as well as missing energy coming from the undetected neutrinos. Nonetheless, this signal is drowned in by the background processes. The background consists of events with the same final

Distribution of the missing mass


Figure 3.8 - Distribution of the missing mass with different beam polarisations and for the Higgs-strahlung and $W W$-fusion leading to $\nu \bar{\nu} H$ final state. The background contribution is not taken into account here.
states as the signal, called irreducible background, and the events with a similar detector response. Their contributions depend on the beam polarisation. For example, the cross-section for a beam polarisation $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(+0.8,-0.3)$ is smaller by an order of magnitude due to the $W$ boson.

Two irreducible backgrounds are considered here, the one involving a $W$ boson exchange and the one with a $Z$-boson exchange. The final state of backgrounds contains two jets with missing energy. The cross-section of this processes is few times larger than the signal one. Nevertheless, the final state with quarks is more likely than the final state with two gluons due to the loop formed in the final state on which the gluons are emitted.

The background involving $W$-bosons, such as $e^{-} e^{+} \rightarrow W^{ \pm} e^{ \pm} \nu_{e} \rightarrow e^{ \pm} \nu_{e} q \bar{q}$ is two orders magnitude bigger than the signal cross-section. The neutrino produced carries a large transverse momentum, whereas the electron or positron has a low transverse momentum. Hence, it can be undetected and be considered as missing energy.

The $W$-pair production can lead to semi-leptonic, hadronic and leptonic decay modes. The semi-leptonic mode consists of two jets and a lepton with its associated neutrino ( $\left.e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow W^{+} W^{-} \rightarrow \nu_{l} l^{ \pm} q \bar{q}\right)$ and it is the major background process for the $W$-pair production. This background is detected by looking for an isolated lepton. Nevertheless, the lep-
ton could escape the detector undetected or be inside a jet. The second $W$-pair production is the hadronic decay on which there is no missing energy $\left(e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow W^{+} W^{-} \rightarrow q \bar{q} q \bar{q}\right)$. This background is reduced by applying cuts on the missing momentum and the di-jet invariant mass. The last contribution is the leptonic final state, which is easy to distinguish from the signal. Thus, it is not considered in the study.

The $Z$-pair background is ten times smaller than the $W$-pair production. The $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow Z Z \rightarrow \nu_{l} \overline{\nu_{l}} q \bar{q}$ process is an irreducible background. The hadronic decay $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow Z Z \rightarrow q \bar{q} q \bar{q}$ is reduced by cutting on the missing momentum and the di-jet invariant mass. The semi-leptonic process $e^{+} e^{-} \rightarrow Z Z \rightarrow l^{+} l^{-} q \bar{q}$ is easier to detect because of the second isolated lepton in the event.

Finally, the last background to take into account is the one with the Higgs boson produced in the final state. Higgs-strahlung can lead to $q \bar{q} H$ and $l^{ \pm} l^{\mp} H$ and has a cross-section three times larger than the signal, but it is easily identified due to the absence of the neutrino. All the decay modes of the Higgs boson different from $H \rightarrow b \bar{b}, H \rightarrow c \bar{c}$ and $H \rightarrow g g$ are considered as part of the background.


Figure 3.9 - Distribution of the visible mass for the signal and background together and the polarisation $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(-0.8,+0.3)$.

Figure 3.9 shows the distribution of the visible mass for all the processes taken into account during the analysis and a beam polarisation $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=$
$(-0.8,+0.3)$. A selection has to be performed in order to isolate the peak at 125 GeV .

### 3.4 Results

### 3.4.1 Event reconstruction

The assumption to study the $H \nu \nu$ channel is to reconstruct a final state which is giving two jets and missing energy in the detector response.

The first step consists of identifying the events containing of isolated leptons in the final state and to remove them from the event sample. The charged leptons detected outside a jet are considered as a source of background. Thus, a neural network is used to identify the different leptons in an event and to check if they belong to a jet. This selection is based on different criteria, like the vertex information, the energy deposited inside the ECAL, the HCAL and the muon system. The processor used for the identification is called IsolatedLeptonTagger and has a veto efficiency of roughly $90 \%$. The $10 \%$ of leptons undetected are coming from events in which the leptons are moving into the forward region and they could escape the detector without being identified by the processor. A better selection is done after the jet reconstruction and is discussed later.

A second source of background is coming from the $\gamma \gamma$ overlay interactions which produce low $p_{t}$ hadrons. These hadrons with a small transverse momenta and a small relative angle to the beam axis are detected as jet-like objects in the forward region of the detector. The identification of the beam jets is based on the $k_{T}$ algorithm [10]. It consists in defining a "distance" $d_{i j}$ between two particles and to find the first closest constituent.

$$
\begin{align*}
d_{i j} & =\frac{\min \left(\mathrm{p}_{\mathrm{T}_{\mathrm{i}}}^{2}, \mathrm{p}_{\mathrm{T}_{\mathrm{j}}}^{2}\right) \cdot \Delta \mathrm{R}_{\mathrm{ij}}^{2}}{R^{2}},  \tag{3.4}\\
d_{i} & =p_{T_{i}}^{2},
\end{align*}
$$

with $\Delta R_{i j}^{2}=\left(y_{i}-y_{j}\right)^{2}+\left(\phi_{i}-\phi_{j}\right)^{2}, y_{i}$ the pseudo rapidity, $\phi_{i}$ the azimuthal angle and $p_{T_{i}}$ the transverse momentum of the particle studied. The minimum between $d_{i j}$ and $d_{i}$ is calculated. If $d_{i j}$ is the minimum value, then, the particles $i$ and $j$ are merged into a jet candidate, they are then removed from the physics list and the jet candidate is added instead. If the minimum value is $d_{i}$, the particle is considered to be part of the beam jet and is removed from the particle lists. This algorithm is repeated iteratively until the number of jets created is equal to the number of jets expected.

After removing the isolated leptons and the low $p_{t}$ hadrons from the physics list, the jet clustering and the flavor tagging processors are applied. Due to the $k_{T}$ algorithm, which removes particle from the physics list, the vertex finder is run again before using the jet clustering algorithm.

### 3.4.2 Event selection

To improve the signal to noise ratio, an event selection is performed by applying different cuts that reduce the background contribution. The order and the performances of the selection cuts are determined by maximising the significance $s$, which is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
s=\frac{\mathrm{N}_{\mathrm{sig}}}{\sqrt{\mathrm{~N}_{\mathrm{sig}}+\mathrm{N}_{\mathrm{bg}}}}, \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\mathrm{N}_{\mathrm{bg}}$ the number of remaining background and $\mathrm{N}_{\mathrm{sig}}$ the number of remaining signal. The maximisation of $s$ is needed to minimise the statistical error. Firstly, the procedure starts with the definition of a collection of observables that could help to discriminate the signal from the background. Then, a test of the possible cut values is performed in a given range and for a given step size. The observable leading to the largest significance is chosen as the optimum observable and is the first selection variable which is applied to a signal sample (containing $W W$-fusion and Higgs-strahlung processes) and the least tight constraint is selected in order to maintain a good signal efficiency. Finally, the cut values of this optimum observable are applied on the complete data set and the procedure is applied again with all the other observables.

The first observable to be applied is the veto information used to find any isolated lepton. As already mentioned, the IsolatedLeptonTagger processor has a veto efficiency of roughly $90 \%$.

The second observable is the visible transverse momentum $P_{\mathrm{t}, \text { vis }}$ of the di-jets.

$$
\begin{align*}
& P_{\mathrm{t}, \mathrm{vis}}=\sqrt{P_{x, v i s}^{2}+P_{y, v i s}^{2}},  \tag{3.6}\\
& P_{\mathrm{x} / \mathrm{y}, \mathrm{vis}}^{2}=P_{\mathrm{x} / \mathrm{y}, \mathrm{j} 1}+P_{\mathrm{x} / \mathrm{y}, \mathrm{j} 2} .
\end{align*}
$$

$P_{\mathrm{x} / \mathrm{y}, \mathrm{j} 1}$ and $P_{\mathrm{x} / y, \mathrm{j} 2}$ are the visible momentum in the $x$ and $y$-directions for the two jets $j 1$ and $j 2$.

The third observable is the invariant visible mass $m_{\text {vis }}$, which is the signal signature.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{m}_{\mathrm{vis}}=\sqrt{\mathrm{E}_{\mathrm{vis}}^{2}-\vec{P}_{\mathrm{vis}}^{2}}, \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $E_{\text {vis }}$ and $P_{\text {vis }}$ the visible energy and momentum of the event. The expected visible mass is $\mathrm{m}_{\mathrm{H}}=125 \mathrm{GeV}$ and its width is mainly driven by the jet energy resolution.

| Process | Background | Signal | Significance |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Cross-section $(\mathrm{fb})$ | $5.69 \cdot 10^{4}$ | $6.82 \cdot 10^{2}$ |  |
| Expected event number | $1.88 \cdot 10^{7}$ | $2.25 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 5.2 |
| No isolated leptons | $1.65 \cdot 10^{7}$ | $2.23 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 5.5 |
| $35<\mathrm{P}_{\mathrm{t}}^{\text {vis }}<155 \mathrm{GeV}$ | $9.31 \cdot 10^{5}$ | $1.82 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 18.7 |
| $95<\mathrm{m}_{\text {vis }}<140 \mathrm{GeV}$ | $1.50 \cdot 10^{5}$ | $1.66 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 40.6 |
| $-1<\cos \alpha<0.22$ | $8.76 \cdot 10^{4}$ | $1.57 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 48.8 |
| $26<($ N.R.C $>1 \mathrm{GeV})<99$ | $2.25 \cdot 10^{4}$ | $1.19 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 56.3 |
| $0.11<$ DurhamjD2ym $<1$ | $1.78 \cdot 10^{4}$ | $1.05 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 62.3 |
| $0<$ abs $\left(\mathrm{P}_{\mathrm{z}}^{\text {vis }}\right)<113 \mathrm{GeV}$ | $1.51 \cdot 10^{4}$ | $1.01 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 63.5 |
| $156<\mathrm{E}_{\text {miss }}<230 \mathrm{GeV}$ | $1.37 \cdot 10^{4}$ | $9.85 \cdot 10^{3}$ | 64.1 |

Table 3.2 - Cut-flow table for a beam polarisation $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(-0.8,+0.3)$.
Table 3.2 summarises the order of the different cut selection for different observables applied on the simulated data set. After eight consecutives cuts, the background contribution is three orders smaller, whereas the signal is almost one order smaller than at the beginning. Nevertheless, the relative uncertainty on the BR measurement is impacted by the significance of the measured signal. To get a better precision, another selection method has to be applied.

### 3.5 Outlook

To preserve the sample quality, it is rather better to use a multivariate analysis (MVA) method to extract the signal from the background. The complete information is then used simultaneously to find the best sets of variables. This analysis was already performed and an MVA method was used, achieving a significance above 70 .

The next step of this analysis is to focus on the decay mode of the Higgs boson into two pairs of charmed quarks and to optimise the flavor tagging performances to separate more accurately the $b$ and $c$ quarks events. For the events and the detector simulated in this chapter, the vertex detector geometry was not optimised and considered of five single-sided layers. Nevertheless, the double-sided option has to be investigated. This geometry offers multiple possibilities, like using two different types of sensors on the same ladder or the possibility of two point measurements per ladder for a track. One side could be equipped with ultra-fast integration time ( $\mathcal{O} \sim 1 \mu \mathrm{~s}$ ) sensors, whereas the other side could embed sensors with an excellent pointing resolution ( $\sigma_{\mathrm{s}, \mathrm{p}} \leqslant 3 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ ). With two sensors on the same mechanical structure, a track is reconstructed by two points of measurement. Thus, these two measurements could be combined together to form "mini-vectors". Studying the "mini-vectors" could help to identify the beamstrahlung from the collision events.

## Chapter 4

## ILD vertex detector and PLUME project

Since the end of the 1960's, the development of position sensitive silicon sensors has permitted the confirmation of the predictions of the Standard Model (SM) with a high precision, as well as the discovery of the top quark. These sensors, mostly employed for the Vertex Detector (VXD), are used to track the particles down to their decay vertices. The design of such a device is driven by the physics requirement of the experiment and plays a crucial role at the International Linear Collider (ILC). For example, one flagship measurement is the study of the Higgs boson couplings to fermions and other bosons. This can be achieved only with precise heavy flavor tagging and the ability to separate the $b$ quarks from the $c$ quarks. Actually, the lifetime of the two quarks is of the same magnitude $\left(1.3 \cdot 10^{-12} \mathrm{~s}\right.$ for the $b$ quark and $1.1 \cdot 10^{-12} \mathrm{~s}$ for the $c$ quark), leading to very close decay vertices.

In this chapter, the role of the vertex detector and the physics requirements to develop one for the ILC environment will be presented. Then, the different options of the International Large Detector (ILD) are shown. The double-sided ladders developed by the PLUME collaboration are presented. To finish, the principle of CMOS sensors and their use in physics are described.

## Contents

4.1 The ILD vertex detector specifications . . . . . . . 62
4.1.1 Performance requirements . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 62
4.1.2 Layout of the vertex detector . . . . . . . . . . . . 65
4.2 PLUME . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 68
4.2.1 Design and goals ..... 68
4.2.2 Prototypes ..... 69
4.2.3 Perspectives ..... 72
4.3 Integration of CMOS sensors ..... 73
4.3.1 Charge creation and signal collection ..... 74
4.3.2 Advantages and disadvantages of the technology ..... 75
4.3.3 Signal processing ..... 77
4.3.4 State of the art in high energy physics ..... 82

### 4.1 The ILD vertex detector specifications

The VXD is the sub-detector closest to the interaction point (IP). It is in charge of reconstructing the vertex by extrapolating particles back to their origin. This detector should be optimised to track particles in a high-density environment, especially those originating from the decay of the $B$ and $C$ mesons. The reconstruction of displaced vertices should be efficient enough to perform good flavour tagging. Therefore, the detector has to measure particles with a lifetime in the picosecond regime, representing a decay length between 150 and $500 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. The minimum distance of the first VXD layer to the IP is determined by the beam pipe radius and the background induced by beamstrahlung, to limit the pixel occupancy. Depending on the option chosen (see section 4.1.2), the VXD has to provide five or six points of measurement with a very precise spatial resolution. For the studies requiring vertex charge reconstruction, the VXD should be able to reconstruct low-momentum and very forward tracks.

### 4.1.1 Performance requirements

The ideal VXD should be made of sensors with a fine granularity in order to increase the ability to locate precisely the particle impacts and to distinguish two nearest particles. The mechanical structure of the detector should provide a good stiffness and stability of the whole system but has to be, at the same time, as light as possible to reduce the interaction of the particles traversing it, before they reached another part of the main detector. Also, in order to reduce the unwanted interactions, the sensor technology used has to have a low power consumption to avoid any special cooling system which can


Figure 4.1 - Scheme of the vertex detector impact parameter. To distinguish $B$-meson and $C$-meson decays, the innermost layer has to be as close as possible to the interaction point. The next layer has to be farer to it.
have a negative impact on the material budget. The design of such a detector, like the minimal distance of the first layer to the IP and the spacing between different layers, is determined by both the beam background and the physics to study. Figure 4.1 represents the impact parameter of a vertex detector. To distinguish $B$-meson decay from $C$-meson decay, the innermost layer has to be as close as possible to the IP, whereas the outer-layer has to be as far as possible. The flavour tagging ability, the vertex charge measurement and tracking, and the displaced vertices reconstruction are the main physics parameters driving the design. The distance of closest approach of a particle to the collision point is called the impact parameter and the resolution achievable by the detector can be approximated with formula 4.1 [6].

$$
\sigma_{I P}=a \oplus \frac{b}{p \sin \theta^{k}}, \text { with } \mathrm{k}= \begin{cases}\frac{3}{2} & \text { in the } R-\Phi \text { projection, }  \tag{4.1}\\ \frac{5}{2} & \text { in the } \mathrm{z} \text { projection. }\end{cases}
$$

Where $\theta$ is the track polar angle (ILD coordinate systems are presented in section 2.3.3), $a$ and $b$ are explained in the following way.

The first term $a$ is the impact parameter resolution of the sensors used for the VXD, which is related to the radius of the inner $R_{\text {int }}$ and outer $R_{\text {ext }}$ layers and the single point resolution $\sigma_{\text {s.p. }}$, as described in equation 4.2.

$$
\begin{equation*}
a=\sigma_{s . p} \cdot \frac{R_{\mathrm{int}} \oplus R_{\mathrm{ext}}}{R_{\mathrm{ext}}-R_{\mathrm{int}}} \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the case of ILD, the single point resolution should not be higher than $\sigma_{s p} \simeq 3 \mu \mathrm{~m}$, leading to an impact parameter with a resolution of the order of $a \simeq 5 \mu \mathrm{~m}$.

The second term, $b$, presented in equation 4.3 , is related to the multiple scattering introducing an uncertainty on the impact parameter.

$$
\begin{equation*}
b=R_{\text {int }} \frac{13.6 \mathrm{MeV} / \mathrm{c}}{\beta c} \cdot Z \cdot \sqrt{\frac{x}{X_{0}}}\left[1+0.036 \cdot \ln \left(\frac{x}{X_{0} \sin \theta}\right)\right] . \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

It depends on the charge $Z$ of the impinging particle, the material budget crossed by the particle $\frac{x}{X_{0} \sin \theta}$ and the distance of the innermost layer to the IP $\left(\mathrm{R}_{\text {int }}\right)$. Depending on the momentum or the crossing angle of the incoming particles, the two impact parameters $a$ and $b$, are more or less important. For low momentum particles or crossing particles with a shallow angle, the particles are interacting more with the detector comments, $b$ parameter becomes important. For higher momentum, parameter $a$ dominates.

| Accelerator | $\mathrm{a}(\mu \mathrm{m})$ | $\mathrm{b}(\mu \mathrm{m})$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| LEP | 25 | 70 |
| Tevatron | 10 | 40 |
| LHC | $<12$ | $<70$ |
| RHIC-II | 12 | 19 |
| ILC/CLIC | $<5$ | $<10$ |

Table 4.1 - Impact parameter resolution for different collider experiments [48].

Table 4.1 summarises the impact parameter resolutions achieved or desired for different experiments. For ILC purposes, the ILD-VXD should reach an impact parameter resolution $a$ better than $5 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ and a $b$ parameter better than $10 \mu \mathrm{~m} \mathrm{GeV} / \mathrm{c}$. This precision on these parameters has never before been obtained in other experiments. As a comparison, typical parameter values for LHC experiments are: $a=12 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ and $b=70 \mu \mathrm{~m} \mathrm{GeV} / \mathrm{c}$.

### 4.1.2 Layout of the vertex detector

The VXD will be made of 12 cm long ladders arranged cylindrically in concentric layers to form long-barrels surrounding the IP, contrary to the SiD vertex detector with a design based on a 5 layer barrel, four endcap disks and three additional forward pixel disks [9]. Figure 4.2 shows the different geometries under consideration for the ILC-ILD. The first option is based on five single-sided layers with a material budget not exceeding $0.11 \%$ of $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ per layer. The five layers are in a radius range varying from 15 mm for the first layer to 60 mm for the last one. The second option is based on three double-sided layers. The material budget should be less than $0.16 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$ for one detecting face. The mechanical structure, which holds the two layers, is 2 mm thick and will be in a radius range varying from 15 to 60 mm . Table 4.2 represents different VXD options for the three double-sided layers. Depending on the radius position, a layer will have fast integration time sensors or highly granular sensors [85].


Figure 4.2 - Overview of the two vertex detector options for the ILC. On the left, the VXD is made of five single sided layers, whereas the right option features three double-sided layers.

Another aspect not discussed yet is the radiation tolerance of the detector, which is directly related to the beam background. The first layer is the most affected by the background and it should have a high radiation tolerance. The required radiation tolerance is about 1 kGy for the total ionising dose and a fluence of $10^{11} \mathrm{n}_{\mathrm{eq}} \cdot \mathrm{cm}^{-2}[8]$.

The efficiency of the VXD has also to be excellent in order to maximise the tracking performance. The efficiency is defined here as the ratio of detected

|  | DBD VXD |  |  | Conservative VXD |  | Ambitious VXD |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Layer $R(\mathrm{~mm})$ |  | $\sigma_{\text {sp }}(\mu \mathrm{m})$ | $\sigma_{\text {time }}(\mu \mathrm{s})$ | $\sigma_{\text {sp }}(\mu \mathrm{m})$ | $\sigma_{\text {time }}(\mu \mathrm{s})$ | $\sigma_{\text {sp }}(\mu \mathrm{m})$ | $\sigma_{\text {time }}(\mu \mathrm{s})$ |
| L1 | 16 | 3 | 50 | 4 | 4 | 3 | 1 |
| L2 | 18 | 6 | 100 | 4 | 4 | 3 | 1 |
| L3 | 37 | 4 | 100 | 4 | 8 | 3 | 2 |
| L4 | 39 | 4 | 100 | 4 | 8 | 3 | 2 |
| L5 | 58 | 4 | 100 | 4 | 8 | 3 | 2 |
| L6 | 60 | 4 | 100 | 4 | 8 | 3 | 2 |

Table 4.2 - Possible performances for the three double-sided layers vertex detector. $R$ is the radius position of the considered layer, $\sigma_{\mathrm{sp}}$ the spatial resolution and $\sigma_{\text {time }}$ the integration time [85].
particles over all the particles crossing the detector. If one layer of the vertex detector misses a hit, the track reconstruction will be less accurate

To summarise, the expected parameters for the ILC are:

- An excellent impact parameter resolution: $a \sim 5 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ and $b \sim 10 \mu \mathrm{~m}$,
- a material budget not exceeding $0.1 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$ per layer for the single-sided option ( $0.16 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$ for the double one),
- radius of the first layer $\sim 15 / 16 \mathrm{~mm}$,
- an occupancy below the percent level.

The currently considered technologies are presented below.

## FPCCD

The Fine Pixels Charged Coupled-Device (FPCCD) [11] is based on Charged Coupled-Device (CCD) processes. The sensor is using small pixels size ( $\sim 5 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ ) to provide a sub-micron spatial resolution and an excellent capability to separate two nearby tracks. Its thickness is $50 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ and the epitaxial layer ( $15 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ thick) is completely depleted to limit the charge spreading around pixels and to reduce the number of hits per pixel. However, the CCD architecture provides slow readout and the matrix will be read between consecutive bunch trains, helping to reduce the power consumption and avoiding beam induced RF noise. Due to the radiation tolerance, the FPCCD is operated at $-40^{\circ} \mathrm{C}$.

## DEPFET

The Depleted P- Channel Field Effect Transistor (DEPFET) [72] is an Active Pixel Sensor (APS) in which field effect transistors are incorporated into each pixel. The single point resolution is $\sim 3 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ for pixels with a size of $20 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. The silicon itself is used as the sensitive part but also as a mechanical structure, minimising the support and services. The sensor is completely depleted of free charge carriers thanks to a voltage applied all along the sensor's thickness. The rolling-shutter approach is used for reading each row and the column readout is done by two auxiliary Application-Specified Integrated Circuits (ASICs). As this technology is not made from standard industrial processes such as CCD or CMOS sensors, the cost of fabrication is higher than the two other technologies.

DEPFET technology has been chosen to build the vertex detector of the BELLE-II experiment [18].

## CMOS pixel sensors

Different options for CMOS pixel sensors are studied, such as 3D integrated CMOS, but due to the context of this thesis, the work will focus on planar technologies developed by the Institut Pluridisciplinaire Hubert Curien (IPHC) of Strasbourg: the Minimum Ionizing MOS Active pixel sensor (MIMOSA) architecture. This technology is described in section 4.3.

For all technologies, the power consumption of the sensors is one of the key point in the VXD design. The higher the power consumption, the more complex the cooling system is and higher the material budget in the sensitive area is. As it was shown in figure 2.2 of chapter 2 , the bunch train will last less than 1 ms for a dead time of 199 ms . Two possibilities are envisaged to benefit from beam structure. For the first one, the hit information is stored using a time stamp during the bunch crossings and the data are read out after the last collision. This method might be used by the FPCCD technology because of the slow integration time of the CCD or with the MIMOSA- 26 sensors. Another solution is to use a power-pulsing method. Right after the last collision, the sensors are switched off or the power consumption is reduced as mush as possible. Before the first collision, the sensors are switched on again. This pulsing method is investigated by different collaborations and is introduced for a single MIMOSA-26 sensors in section 4.2.3.

### 4.2 PLUME

The Pixelated Ladder with Ultra-low Material Embedding (PLUME) project aims to produce double-sided ladder prototypes driven by ILC requirements [69]. Three labs in Europe are involved: the Physics with Integrated CMOS Sensors and ELectron machines (PICSEL) group at the IPHC in Strasbourg, the University of Bristol and DESY in Hamburg. The collaboration is studying the feasibility to build such elements of vertex detector using MAPS thinned down to $50 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ and is exploring the benefits of this design. Strasbourg is developing and mounting the sensors on the modules, to take care of the readout and the Data AcQuisition (DAQ), and to provide a cooling system. The mechanical design, stability measurements and assembly procedure of the ladders are done by the University of Bristol, while DESY has studied the ladder mock-up, performed power-pulsing tests and is now characterising and validating the modules in the lab. In 2016, DESY has provided the opportunity to test the ladder in real conditions thanks to the test beam facility and the possibility to use the DAQ software developed at DESY: EUDAQ [31].

### 4.2.1 Design and goals



Figure 4.3 - Side view (transversal and longitudinal) of the PLUME mechanical structure.

Figure 4.3 illustrates the design of a PLUME ladder. The ladder structure is defined by the sensors arrangement on the mechanical support (positioned next to each other). In this design, the stiffener is a 2 mm thick Silicon Carbide ( SiC ) foam which has a density varying between $8 \%$ and $4 \%$ (depending on the ladder version) and could be reduced to only 2 or $3 \%$. The choice of this foam results in a good compromise between the stiffness and
the thickness compared to other materials [52]. Figure 4.5 represents the Young Modulus as a function of the radiation length for different materials. The structure of the SiC foam is shown in figure 4.4. It is macroscopically uniform and has the advantage of being easily machinable. Nevertheless, it has a low thermal conductivity ( $50 \mathrm{~W} . \mathrm{m}^{-1} . \mathrm{K}^{-1}$ ) and cannot be used to dissipate the heat trough contact. On each side of the stiffener, a low mass flex-cable is glued, which is used to connect the sensors for powering and managing them. It is made of copper traces coated in Kapton, but new prototypes using aluminum traces are developed and currently tested in order to reduce the material budget. The ladder embeds twelve sensors, six on each face, that are glued and wire-bonded to the flex cable. On each flex-cable, a Zero Insertion Force (ZIF) connector is used for linking the modules to two external servicing boards, using a jumper cable. For the moment, the design is dedicated to the MIMOSA- 26 sensors thinned down to $50 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ but it can be adapted to any kind of MAPS sensors having the same thickness. The main issues for the integration of MIMOSA-26 comes from power pulsing ability, as well as the power dissipation of these sensors. This issues will be discussed in the next section (see 4.2.2).


Figure 4.4 - Microscopical view of the silicon carbide foam structure.
The aims of the collaboration are to build ladders with a material budget better than $0.35 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$ for a spatial resolution better than $3 \mu \mathrm{~m}$, and to evaluate the benefits of a double-sided measurement.

### 4.2.2 Prototypes

Since 2009, the collaboration is studying the design, the production, the impact of the mechanical structure on the ladder's performances, but also how to power and control the sensors together. The first ladder prototype, called version-0 (V-0) was developed and tested in 2009. The purpose of this prototype was to settle the fabrication and the test beam procedures,


Figure 4.5 - Graph of the Young modulus in GPa as a function of the radiation length in cm for different materials.
without trying to reach the desired material budget goal. Two MIMOSA-20 analog output sensors were mounted on each side of a stiffener, providing a $1 \times 4 \mathrm{~cm}^{2}$ sensitive area. The prototype was tested in 120 GeV pion beam at the CERN-SPS and the results have demonstrated the benefits of the doublesided measurement on the spatial resolution, which is improved by a factor of about $1 / \sqrt{2}[67]$.

Then in 2010, a second prototype featuring the desired sensitive surface, called version-1 (V-1), was developed. Each module of the ladder was made of Kapton flex-cable with a thickness of 0.14 mm , using copper traces. These modules are called Optiprint-Kapton-Flex-cable (OKF), where Optiprint is the vendor of these flex-cables. It is the first version to embed six MIMOSA26 binary output sensors working simultaneously on each side of the stiffener. The material budget is estimated to be $0.65 \%$ of $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ in the sensor's sensitive area. The aim of this prototype was to validate the operation of multiple sensors in a chain. Two ladders were tested in real conditions. The first one was tested with 120 GeV pions at CERN-SPS in 2011, while the second ladder was tested in April 2016 with up to 5 GeV positrons at DESY in Hamburg. The DESY test beam results are presented in chapter 7, while a specific study of the sensors' deformation observed at CERN in 2011 is discussed in chapter 6.


Figure 4.6 - Side and top view of the first PLUME prototype built in 2009.

At the beginning of 2016, the third prototype versions were mounted but have not yet been completely tested. In fact, this new version is divided into two sub-versions: one using copper traces and the other one aluminum traces. Nevertheless, both sub-versions have a new design featuring reduced traces thickness to have a narrower flex-cable ( 18 mm width) adjusted to the sensors width in order to minimise the dead areas. The flex-design has slightly changed to have a mirrored geometry (figure 4.8) and a straight geometry in order to minimize the dead area too and have a better alignment solution. The stiffener is made of a lower density SiC foam reducing the global material budget.

Table 4.3 summarises the material budget reached by the different prototypes.


Figure 4.7 - Front view of the ladder version-1 made in 2010 in its holding box. On the left, there is the connector to the output board servicing, on the right a connection to blow air on the module. As this version was not made with a mirrored design, the flexible cables are not entirely overlapping and the SiC foam can be seen (in black here).


Figure 4.8 - Picture of the first mirrored module made with aluminum traces. The cable width is adjusted to the size of the sensor.

### 4.2.3 Perspectives

Although the collaboration has shown their expertise in building light mechanical structures, more tests and optimisations have to be done. MIMOSA26 sensors are not designed to match the ILC specifications. Since a bunch train at the ILC last only 0.95 ms and the integration time of this sensor is $115.2 \mu \mathrm{~s}$, a new CPS with a faster integration time has to be integrated.

| Layer | budget (\% $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ ) |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | V-0 | V-1 | Goal |
| Sensor (x2) | 0.106 | 0.106 | 0.106 |
| Flex-cable (x2) | 1.048 | 0.300 | 0.068 |
| Glue (x4) | 0.04 | 0.04 | 0.04 |
| Passive components | 0 | 0.033 | 0.033 |
| Stiffener (foam) | 0.764 | 0.175 | 0.087 |
| Total | 1.926 | 0.654 | 0.334 |

Table 4.3 - Estimation of the material budget for the different prototypes of the PLUME ladder.

Another problem of the MIMOSA-26 sensors is that they are not suited for power-pulsing scheme. Remember that the principle of the power pulsing is to reduce the consumption of the sensor during the 200 ms dead time. Nevertheless, a power-pulsing study on a single Mi-26 sensor has been done and the results have shown that the nominal supply voltage of the MIMOSA-26 can be lowered from 3.3 V to 1.85 V without losing the sensor's registers. The fake hit rate measured was close to the one obtained in normal conditions after the sensor reaches a stable operation. Moreover, the power consumption was reduced by a factor of 6.3 [55].

A complete power-pulsing study of the whole ladder has to be done in the lab in order to make sure that the sensors are still behaving correctly. If the first results are promising, the power-pulsing will be tested under real conditions with a high magnetic field. The impact of the Lorentz forces due to the coupling of the power-pulsing and the magnetic field is going to be studied, especially if this structure will induce unwanted deformations or vibrations.

A closer perspective for the collaboration is to integrate two ladders in the physics commissioning of the Beam Exorcism for A Stable experiment (BEAST) experiment at KEK [84].

### 4.3 Integration of CMOS sensors

The PICSEL group of the IPHC at Strasbourg is developing since 1999 CMOS sensors called MIMOSA for Minimum Ionizing MOS Active pixel sensor. They are semi-conducting pixel sensors based on the APS, an alternative to the CCD technology. The imaging industry developed this technology at
the beginning of the 1990's, and it is used nowadays in commercial applications, like smartphone's cameras. One particularity of the sensors developed by Strasbourg is that the various functionalities, such the sensitive area and the electronic layer where the signal is processed, are made of the same material. This device is called then Monolithic Active Pixel Sensor (MAPS) and the different layers are:

- a substrate providing mechanical stability;
- an epitaxial layer which is the sensitive volume of the sensor;
- an electronic layer where the diodes collecting the charges and the micro-circuits processing the signal are located.

The motivation to use this technology or any other silicon sensor in particle physics is due to the minimum energy needed to create an electron/hole pair by a traversing particle. In silicon, this minimum energy is only 3.6 eV , while for a gaseous detector, it is close to 30 eV .

### 4.3.1 Charge creation and signal collection

The CMOS sensor can detect impinging particles thanks to their structure, but also to the interaction of particles with matter. When a charged particle is traversing a layer of matter, it loses energy via ionisations due to electromagnetic interactions with electrons and nuclei. Due to the size of a MAPS, charged particle loses only a small fraction of its energy, and the spread of the energy loss can be described by a Landau distribution. A Minimum Ionizing Particle (MIP) creates 80 electrons per microns inside the silicon.

At the beginning, the microelectronic industry has insulated the transistors from the substrate using a high-resistivity layer, called the epitaxial layer. The development of CMOS sensors was accelerated due to the properties offered by these semiconductors.

The CMOS sensors developed by the IPHC at Strasbourg are called monolithic MAPS sensors because the different layers of the sensor are made in one block of the same material, but with different doping. The structure of the sensor is a highly doped $\mathrm{P}+$ substrate made of a moderate quality silicon. The crystal structure contains a lot of defects, hence the recombination rate of charge carriers is high. Above this bulk, a low-doping P- layer is grown. The silicon used is good quality, thus the charge carriers have less chance to recombine. This layer is the sensitive part of the sensor and is
called the epitaxial layer. On top of it, an N-well implant has the role of charge collection. The interface between the N-wells and the epitaxial layer forms a P-N junction called a collection diode. A depleted area is created by this junction, on which the charge carriers are attracted. Nevertheless, this $\mathrm{P}-\mathrm{N}$ junction is only one part of the pixel. Next to the N-well implants sit highly-doped P-wells used to reflect the charge carriers to the implants. The difference of doping between the bulk and the epitaxial layer is also used to reflect the charge carriers to the collection diode.

The typical doping concentration are $10^{15}{\mathrm{at} . \mathrm{cm}^{-3}}^{\text {for the epitaxial layer, }}$ $10^{19}{\mathrm{at} . \mathrm{cm}^{-3}}$ in the substrate and $10^{17}{\mathrm{at} . \mathrm{cm}^{-3}}$ for the other layers. The doping concentration defines the size of the depleted region. For these doping concentrations, only a small region around the P-N junction is depleted, while the epitaxial layer is mainly undepleted. As no external voltage is applied to the sensor to increase the depleted region, the charge carriers created by crossing particles are thermally diffused from the epitaxial layer to the diode. Nevertheless, the different doping levels produce a built-in voltage defined as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
V_{b}=\frac{k T}{q} \ln \left(\frac{N_{p+}}{N_{p-}}\right) i . \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The built-in voltage depends on the Boltzmann constant $k$, the temperature $T$, the elementary charge $q$ and the different concentrations doping $N_{p \pm}$ of the interface. Due to the different doping levels, the electrons are restricted to diffuse inside the sensitive volume, to be then guided towards a collection diode. One effect of the thermal diffusion is that the average path of the electrons in the epitaxial layer is longer than the one they would have in a fully-depleted sensor. Hence, the probability of recombination between an electron and a hole increases. Also, the charges tend to spread more around neighboring n -well. Therefore, the charge collection efficiency is lower than the fully-depleted sensor.

### 4.3.2 Advantages and disadvantages of the technology

CMOS sensors have several interesting properties. First of all, the fabrication cost is lower than other pixel technologies due to the industrial processes used to build the sensors. Therefore, many prototypes and bigger matrices can be built, while benefiting from the industrial experience. The limit toward small pixels is fixed by the number of transistors embedded in a pixel. Smaller grid sizes with a pitch size of few microns are built by the imaging industry.


Figure 4.9 - Drawing of MAPS structure representing the different layers of the sensor and the path of charge carriers in the epitaxial layer.

Secondly, due to the size of the depleted area, the charge carriers tend to spread more over neighboring pixels. On the one hand, the signal collected per pixel is smaller, but on the other hand, the reconstruction of the hit position with a centre of gravity algorithm is improving the spatial resolution. To give an idea, a binary output sensor with a pitch of $18.4 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ can achieve a spatial resolution better than $3 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. Figure 4.10 shows the evolution of the spatial resolution achieved for different pitch size for different MIMOSA sensors.

Thirdly, the different doping of the different layers is responsible for the reflection of the charge carriers to the collection diodes. However, only the interface between two different doped regions is responsible for this reflection. Figure 4.11 shows the principle of the charge collection at the interface between the substrate and the epitaxial layer. The substrate can be thinned down to few microns leading to a sensor with a thickness of $50 \mu \mathrm{~m}$, while keeping the possibility to manipulate them. In this way, the material budget can be reduced down to $0.053 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$.

Nevertheless, the thickness of the epitaxial layer (usually between 10 and $15 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ ) and the small depleted region (in the order of 1 to $5 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ ) are responsible for a small charge collection. As a matter of fact, a MIP is creating 80 electron/hole pairs per micron, so the number of charges collected by the diode is of the order of a thousand electrons. Hence, the signal created is only a few millivolts and low noise electronics have to be used for processing


Figure 4.10 - Evolution of the spatial resolution achieved for different pitch sizes and for different MIMOSA sensors.
the signal.
CMOS sensors are sensitive to ionising and non-ionising radiations which degrade the sensor properties. The non-ionising radiation damages the crystal structure of the epitaxial layers, creating defects in the lattice. The recombination rate is increased and reduces the signal collected. To avoid this effect, two solutions are possible. The first one is to reduce the size of the pixels in order to decrease the path of the particles from the epitaxial layer to the collection diodes. Nevertheless, a smaller pitch size induces a slower readout and the cost to build such a sensor increases. The second solution is to increase the resistivity of the epitaxial layer to expand the depleted area.

The ionising radiation is responsible for charge accumulation in oxides at the interface with silicon layers. The leakage current increases in the pixel and diode collection. The ionising dose increases the noise, whereas the non-ionising fluence decreases the signal.

### 4.3.3 Signal processing

If no charge is collected by the pixel, the voltage at the equivalent capacitor of the diode is growing because of the leakage current inherent in the junction. The pixel reading can be done in two different ways, depending on the method used to minimise the leakage current effect. Currently, two pixel architectures


Figure 4.11 - Principle of charge collection in a MAPS. The difference of doping between the substrate and the epitaxial layers create a reflection region.
are used to compensate the diode's leakage current: the 3 Transistors pixel design, mainly used in imaging, and the self-biased pixel design. The circuit diagram which is shown in figure 4.12 represents the two methods to design pixels.

The first one, presented in figure 4.12a, consists of reinitialising the collection diode's voltage to a reference voltage thanks to a reset transistor, denoted M1 on the diagram. This method works in two steps. Firstly, the M1 transistor is closed and the charge of the equivalent capacitor $C_{d}$ associated to the junction $\mathrm{P}-\mathrm{N}$, represented by a diode on the diagram, is slowly decreasing because of the diode's leakage current. During this phase, the pixel is sensitive and is read. After a time interval equivalent to the integration time of the sensor, the transistor M1 is opened to recharge $C_{d}$ to its initial voltage. During this time, the pixel is not sensitive. While M1 is used for the reset, M2 is used as a pre-amplifier of the signal created by the diode and M3 link-up the voltage to the output of the circuit. Although this compensation method is fast, it generates a dead time for detection between two readings.

(a) Three transistors (3T) pixel design.

(b) Self-biased pixel design.

Figure 4.12 - Two different architectures of pixel.

Figure 4.12b depicts the self-biased pixel design method [27]. It is using a P-N junction (symbolised here by a diode mounted on the other side) coupled to the N -well implant to absorb the leakage current. The inverted diode is continuously compensating the diode's leakage current, thus the dead time vanishes. While no particle is crossing the sensor, an equilibrium appears between the leakage and recharge current. A particle going through the sensor disrupts this equilibrium. The charge collected by the pixel leads to a discharge of the diode's capacitor $C_{d}$, followed by a recharge of this capacitor thanks to the second diode to reach the equilibrium again. Nevertheless, if the recharge procedure is too fast compared to the integration time, the physics signal is masked and the passage of the particle is never notified. Even if the time interval to recharge the capacitor $C_{d}$ is set properly, an important charge collection per pixel could disturb the recharge phase and the pixel will reach a stable level again only after a long time interval of the order of 10 ms .

## Integration time and readout

For a non-depleted epitaxial layer, the charge carriers are mostly thermally diffused to the collection diodes. The time to collect these charges in a pixel is $\sim 100 \mathrm{~ns}$, setting a maximal limit to read the signal. This integration time is not reachable due to other factors, like the pixel occupancy or the time needed to obtain the information of all the pixels. Also, a compromise to reach fast integration times has to be made. The faster the sensor, the more important the power consumption of the electronics becomes. Moreover, to reduce the integration time, a solution exists in increasing the size of the pixels. In consequence, the pointing resolution of the device is impacted. For
the case of the ILC, the integration time is dictated by the pixel occupancy that should not be bigger than a percent, to stay in the using sensor's range and to be able to use the pattern recognition for tracking.

The first sensors were developed using an analog output. With this approach, the pixels were addressed sequentially and their output was multiplexed in one bus line. The advantage of such a method is that the discrimination can be adjusted offline for each pixel, thus compensating for a nonuniform response. Nevertheless, the integration time is dependent on the operational frequency of the bus (usually 50 MHz ) and the number of pixels contained in a matrix. For a sensor having millions of pixels, the integration time is then of the order of a millisecond. An analog output is then too slow for ILC purposes.


Figure 4.13 - Schematic operation of the parallel column readout.
To overcome this problem, an approach is to group the pixels in columns and to read them in parallel. Figure 4.13 depicts the principle of this method called column parallel readout or rolling-shutter. Instead of having one bus line for the whole matrix, each column has its own bus and a data sparsification logic is integrated on the periphery of the sensor. One row is read
out in between 100 ns and 200 ns , independently of the number of pixels contained in it. As a consequence, a matrix containing thousands of rows has an integration time of $\mathcal{O}(100 \mu \mathrm{~s})$. Moreover, to improve the integration time an output memory is duplicated at the periphery of the sensor. Hence, when one line is read, the precedent one is processed by the micro-circuits at the end of each bus line of each column. To minimise the data bandwidth, only the pixels above certain thresholds are read thanks to discriminators coupling to a zero suppression logic, called Suppression de zéro (SUZE) [44]. In this way, only the address of the first pixel hit in a row and the number of the adjacent fired ones are stored. This memory is duplicated to be able to process one row, while the previous one is read out by the outside world. In order to increase the readout speed, two techniques are conceivable [82]. The first one provides elongated pixels in the vertical direction in order to reduce the number of rows, thus degrading the spatial resolution in the same direction. The second one consists of dividing the columns into two distinct parts, which have their dedicated output.


Figure 4.14 - Principle of the zero suppression logic.

## Noise

An important figure of merit is the effective noise equivalent for one pixel. Many factors are driving this noise value and the different kind of noises are divided into two categories: the Fixed Pattern Noise (FPN) and the Temporal Noise (TN). The nonuniform response of the pixels in a sub-array is responsible for the FPN and is regarded as an offset between the pixel pedestals, which is subtracted from the pixel response to reduce the impact of this noise. The TN has different origins, as the shot noise, the pink noise or the thermal noise. The different operational phases to read the signal are contributing to the noise.

One contribution to the TN appears in the $3 T$ pixel design only during the reset phase. This noise arises when the transistor is open restoring the
charge of the capacitor associated with the collection diode. It is dependent on the temperature and the diode's capacitance.

The second one is the noise during integration and is caused by statistical fluctuations of the leakage current (shot noise). The faster the integration time, the smaller the shot noise contribution becomes.

Finally, the third one arises from the readout, while the column switch and the source follower capacitors are working. This noise depends on the contribution of each capacitor.

To remove the FPN and the reset noise, a Correlated Double Sampling (CDS) is performed inside the pixel or at the bottom of the column. It consists to acquire two frames and to subtract the first one to the second one to search for possible signals. Chapter 5 describes the steps to characterise the FPN and TN and to select a sufficient Signal to Noise Ratio (SNR) in order to minimise the noise contribution, and to find a range at which the sensor is working properly.

Typically a SNR larger than 10 is considered as appropriate to detect efficiently particles. Considering the charge sharing, signals as small as about $200 e^{-}$can be recorded. Hence, the Equivalent Noise Charge (ENC) shall be kept below $20 e^{-}$. This noise level is easily achieved with analogue output sensors, for which prototypes reach typically $10 e^{-}$ENC. For sensor featuring digital output, the additional treatment micro-circuits tend to increase the ENC to around $15 e^{-}$.

### 4.3.4 State of the art in high energy physics

The first full-scale digital sensor developed by the PICSEL group was the MIMOSA-26. It was designed to equip the reference planes of the EUDET beam telescope and has been used since 2010 to build the PLUME prototypes. It is fabricated in the AMS $0.35 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ technology and has a matrix containing approximately $6.6 \times 10^{5}$ pixels, distributed in 1152 columns and 576 rows. The pixel pitch is $18.4 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ and the sensitive area corresponds to $21.2 \times 10.6 \mathrm{~cm}^{2}$. The readout of the matrix is ensured by a rolling-shutter working at 80 MHz frequency and the integration time is $115.2 \mu \mathrm{~s}$. The signal produced by the charge collection inside the pixel is firstly amplified. Then, the CDS technique is used to subtract successive frames before sending the signal to the bottom of the pixel array, where the signal processing circuitry is placed. Analog-to-digital conversion is done, coupled to a second double sampling, in order to reduce the FPN. The output of the discriminators is then connected to a zero suppression logic, in which an output memory is


Figure 4.15 - Plots representing the efficiency, the fake hit rate per pixel and the spatial resolution as a function of the discriminator threshold. This results were obtained with minimum ionising particles (pions of 120 GeV ).
duplicated to ensure a continuous readout. The signal is finally transmitted to the outside world. The performance obtained with a MIMOSA-26 is shown in figure 4.15. The architecture of the MIMOSA-26 is represented by a blockdiagram in figure 4.16b. The power consumption is $1.1 \mu \mathrm{~W} /$ pixel and the sensor is thinned down to $50 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ in order to minimise the multiple scattering inside the volume.

The PICSEL group then developed digital output sensors for the pixel vertex detector at the STAR experiment at Brookhaven National Laboratory [80][19]. Figure 4.17 shows a half-section of the STAR vertex detector (figure 4.17a) and a MIMOSA-28 bonded on a PCB (figure 4.17b). They are based on the architecture of MIMOSA-26 with some modifications. The matrix contains 960 columns and 928 rows for a pitch of $20.7 \times 20.7 \mu \mathrm{~m}^{2}$. The sensitive area is $19.7 \times 19.2 \mathrm{~cm}^{2}$, for an integration time of less than $200 \mu \mathrm{~s}$. The sensor can reach a particle detection rate of $10^{6}$ partices. $\mathrm{cm}^{-2} . \mathrm{s}^{-1}$. Finally, their power consumption is lower or equal to $150 \mathrm{~mW} . \mathrm{cm}^{-2}$. The spatial resolution obtained for ULTIMATE is less than $4 \mu \mathrm{~m}$.

This chapter has depicted the purpose of the vertex detector for the ILD. Different technologies were introduced, to focus specifically on the CMOS sensors and their use in high-energy physics. The PLUME collaboration aims to integrate MAPS onto light double-sided ladders, in order to reach

(a) Picture of a MIMOSA-26 mounted on a PCB.

(b) Layout of the MIMOSA-26 matrix.

Figure 4.16 - Block-diagram and a picture of the MIMOSA-26


Figure 4.17 - Pictures of the STAR vertex detector and an ULTIMATE chip
the requirements of the ILC. The collaboration has performed different steps to produce the first full-scale ladder, which only have a material budget of $0.35 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$ and a spatial resolution better than $4 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. The principle of CMOS technology was presented. The next chapter is focusing on the electrical validation of these sensors mounted onto a PLUME ladder.

## Chapter 5

## Basic assessments

In chapter 4, an overview of the PLUME project was presented. Since 2010, the collaboration is building full-scale and fully functional ladders and is trying to reduce the material budget down to $0.35 \%$ of $\mathrm{X}_{0}$. Due to the six sensors working together and the huge amount of electrical lines to control and read the different sensors on a module, these ladders have to be carefully tested and validated in the laboratory before performing tests under real conditions at CERN or DESY test beam facilities. This chapter introduces the different steps from the assembly procedure performed at Strasbourg (for the module) and Bristol (for a complete ladder), to the final tests to study the sensor's responses including electrical functionality tests at Hamburg.
Contents
5.1 PLUME assembly procedures . . . . . . . . . . . . 86
5.1.1 Module and ladder assembly . . . . . . . . . . . . . 86
5.1.2 Visual inspections . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 87
5.2 Electrical validation . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 89
5.2.1 Auxiliary board . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 89
5.2.2 Smoke test . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 92
5.2.3 JTAG communication . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 94
5.3 Noise measurements . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 95
5.3.1 Characterisation bench . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 95
5.3.2 Threshold scan . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 97
5.3.3 Noise measurements . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 100
5.4 Conclusions . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 103

### 5.1 PLUME assembly procedures

The ladders are built in two steps. Two independent modules are assembled at Strasbourg and then tested at DESY. These modules consist of a flexcable on which MIMOSA-26 sensors are glued. Afterwards, they are shipped to Bristol where the modules are glued together on a SiC foam to form a PLUME ladder. The assembly procedures are introduced below, as well as the visual inspection between the mounting steps.

### 5.1.1 Module and ladder assembly

## Module assembly

The module assembly is performed at the IPHC by the microelectronics group and is done in three steps. First of all, passive components (capacitors, resistors) are soldered onto a flex-cable. To reinforce the flex-cable around the connector area, an epoxy layer with a thickness of $300 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ is applied on the flex-cable's back-side. This layer is limited only to the connector area, increasing locally the material budget.

Secondly, the module is then placed on a metal jig to ensure its flatness using a vacuum suction. The next step is to glue the six sensors onto the flex. The positioning of the chips used to be done manually, but a programmable robot, which has a maximum mismatch alignment reaching approximately $20 \mu \mathrm{~m}$, is now used for this procedure. As the sensors are thin and fragile, they are manipulated with a vacuum sucker. A few drops of glue are dispensed on the flex and then, these sensors are gently pressed one by one on top of it to be glued. Afterwards, the glue is cured in an oven. After this step, the chips cannot be removed anymore. If a sensor is not working properly, it can not be replaced by a new one because the force needed to remove it might break the fragile flex-cable. In the worse case scenario, a new sensor can be glued on top of it, but this solution cannot be envisaged for a real ladder as it increases locally the material budget. To avoid this situation, a sensor probe-test is performed to select only good sensors before the module assembly. This step is done at the IK in Frankfurt. The final step consists of soldering the 540 wire-bonds (a single MIMOSA-26 requires 90 wire-bonds) using a semi-automatic machine. Wire-bonds can be protected by applying a glob-top epoxy [64]. It has the advantage of offering protection against moisture or contaminants, adding electrical insulation and prohibiting their movement during other manipulations (see section 5.1.2 for the utility of the glob-top epoxy). Nevertheless, it increases locally the material budget and if
an electrical problem occurs, the wire-bonds cannot be disconnected. Once the module is assembled, it is finally transferred onto a plastic sole, which has alignment pins. This sole helps with the manipulation of a module, but also reduces the stress on the flex-cable, by holding it as flat as possible. During shipping, a plastic cover is screwed on top of this sole to completely protect the module.

## Ladder assembly

The ladder assembly is performed by the Bristol team. The assembly comprises the gluing of two modules on a spacer ( SiC ) and a bate

It consists of gluing two modules together on a spacer ( SiC ) and a bate (an aluminum plate). The operation is done entirely by hand. Each module is placed on a separate jig containing grooves and alignment pins to ensure the positioning, as presented in figure 5.1a. The sensitive side of the module is facing the jig to have an access to the rear of the flex-cable for gluing. Then, foam is placed on one module below the sensors, while a bate is glued below the connector with an overlap on this foam (see figure 5.1b). The second module receives some glue on its backside before the jigs are assembled together. Then, glue is cured for one day. The amount of glue needed for the assembly was studied carefully. As the foam's surface is irregular, if not enough glue is used, then gluing will not work. But if too much glue is used, the jigs might be stuck together. When the ladder is finally ready, it is placed into an aluminum box used for testing and shipping.

### 5.1.2 Visual inspections

As explained in section 5.1.1, the sensor positioning was performed first manually and later was switched to an automatic procedure. To tune properly the robot which is in charge of gluing the sensors on the flex-cable, the microelectronic group needs a position feedback. Each module is then inspected under a microscope to measure the gap between two sensors, and their position relative to each other. The distance between the last pixel of a sensor to the first one on the next sensor should be less than $500 \mu \mathrm{~m}$, taking into account the robot's $20 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ mismatch. Figure 5.2 is a picture taken with a microscope showing the relative position of two sensors on the bottom of the matrix for an aluminum straight module. The gap between the two edges is $\sim 51 \mu \mathrm{~m}$.

A visual inspection is also needed to check if wire-bonds are correctly connected to the right sensor's pad and to verify that the gluing procedure did

(b)

Figure 5.1 - Drawing of the ladder assembly. The modules are first placed on the jigs, sensors facing the grooves 5.1a, then the foam and the bate are glued between the two modules 5.1b


Figure 5.2 - Visualisation of the alignment. The distance between the two edges is $\sim 51 \mu \mathrm{~m}$.
not break one of the sensors due to some dust. Moreover, this inspection is needed to determine if modules were damaged during shipment. The modules are fragile objects that have to be manipulated with care. Any wrong manipulation can damage severely the vital functionality. For example, figure 5.3 shows a picture taken with a microscope of wire-bonds crushed by a cable falling. Sensitive parts and electronics were not damaged, but some wires were in contact leading to a shortcut. Fortunately, the microelectronic group at Strasbourg was able to unbend the wires and repair the most damaged ones. This module is now fully operational again and working correctly.


Figure 5.3 - Picture taken with a microscope showing crushed wire-bonds due to a falling cable. Some of the wire-bonds are in contact leading to a shortcut and a non-functional module.

### 5.2 Electrical validation

The electrical validation of a PLUME module or ladder is performed in two steps. The first one consists of checking that all the systems controlling and powering the module are working. Then, a module is connected and its power-consumption, as well as its communication, are checked.

### 5.2.1 Auxiliary board

A module or a PLUME ladder is connected to the outside world by plugging a jumper cable on a ZIF connector at one of its edges. This jumper cable
is linked to an auxiliary board which powers the module's sensors, but also drives them. It is also used to transfer the data to the data acquisition system. This auxiliary card is connected to a power supply board which provides the nominal voltages needed by the sensors. The power supply board delivers the digital and analog voltages $\left(\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{DD}_{\mathrm{D}}}\right.$ and $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{DD}_{\mathrm{A}}}$ are set to 3.3 V using two independent potentiometers), the buffer voltage $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{CC}}$ fixed to 3.3 V , as well as the voltage for the temperature measurement diodes, a $\pm 5 \mathrm{~V}$ supply for trigger and a power pulsing signal. For laboratory testing of a module, the power pulsing option is deactivated by connecting this pin to the +5 V pin of the trigger. The clamping voltage $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{clp}}$ used for the polarisation of the pixel has to be in the range [2, 2.2] V. On the first version of the auxiliary board, $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{clp}}$ was provided by an external power supply, but the new version delivers the 2.1 V needed by using an Inter-Integrated Circuit (I2C) chip or a potentiometer (the user can select which methods to use via a jumper). The auxiliary board is also connected to a computer in charge of the sensors' slow control. Two RJ45 are providing the Joint Test Action Group (JTAG) registers, as well as the start and reset signal. For a complete ladder, the two modules have to be synchronised and the clock can be injected by a clock distribution board. One RJ45 connector is dedicated to the JTAG slow control and the signals delivered are:

- Test Data In (TDI): receives the serial data input feed to the test data registers or instruction register;
- Test Mode Select (TMS): controls operation of the test logic (for example, by selecting the register);
- Test Clock (TCK): used to load test mode data from TMS pin and test data on TDI pin at the rising edge, while at the falling edge, it is used to output the test data on the next pin;
- Test Data Out (TDO): the output data feed the input data of the next sensor and the last sensor sends the information back to the computer

The second RJ45 connector provides the signals coming from the DAQ:

- Clock: has a rate of 80 MHz and is provided by the clock distribution board to synchronise two modules together;
- Start: signal provided by the DAQ software to start and synchronise multiple sensors (the JTAG start works only for one sensor);
- Reset: reset the registers to test default values.

The principle of connection between the auxiliary board and the different components to operate one module is depicted in figure 5.4.


Figure 5.4 - Sketch of the PLUME connection scheme.
Before connecting a PLUME module to the auxiliary board, the voltages have to be set and the JTAG communication has to be checked on the auxiliary card. Two external power supplies deliver 8 V D.C. to the power supply board and give information on the power consumption of the whole system. The empty auxiliary board has a current consumption of about 350 mA . Then, $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{CC}}, \mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{DD}_{\mathrm{D}}}$ and $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{DD}_{\mathrm{A}}}$ should be at 3.3 V , but only the two last voltages can be adjusted by using two potentiometers on the power supply board. $\mathrm{V}_{\text {clp }}$ is set to 2.1 V and should not be outside the range [2,2.2] V. JTAG communication is verified on an oscilloscope. The observed signals should be:

TMS: by default is fixed to 1 and changes to 0 at every register selection;

TCK: this clock is slower ( 30 kHz ) than the 80 MHz needed by the sensors and is dedicated to the slow control;

Reset: by default is fixed to 1 and should change to 0 every time the reset is called by the JTAG software;

Start: during the test, the start signal is provided by the DAQ software;
Clock: independently of the method used, the 80 MHz clock has to be correctly distributed along the auxiliary card.

### 5.2.2 Smoke test

After validating the auxiliary board (and with the power supplies switched off), a module can be connected to it via a jumper cable. Voltages applied to this module have to be adjusted again due to some dissipation inside the flexcable and jumper cable. $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{DD}_{\mathrm{D}}}, \mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{DD}_{\mathrm{A}}}$ and $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{clp}}$ can be measured on different pads of the ladder: three pads are close to the connector, while the three others are at the edge of the flex-cable, as seen in figure 5.5.


Figure 5.5 - Picture of a aluminum mirrored module with the points of measurement for $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{DD}_{\mathrm{D}}}, \mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{DD}_{\mathrm{A}}}$ and $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{clp}}$.

Two versions of jumper cable were produced, one very flexible with a high resistivity and the second one was stiff with a low resistivity. The most flexible cable was not used because of an important voltage drop between the auxiliary board and the module, but also because of a wrong fabrication. After setting the voltages to nominal values and plugging in a module, a short-circuit happened. The auxiliary board tests were correct and were demonstrated one more time without the module. Then, a thermal camera was used to find if a sensor was responsible for the short-circuit. One sensor was hotter than the others, although, the wire-bonds were correctly assigned. The problem was shown to come from a short-circuit between the $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{DD}}$
and $\mathrm{V}_{\mathrm{clp}}$ lines. By bypassing these two lines on the jumper cable and by connecting them directly to the module, this short-circuit has disappeared. The problem was solved by using a stiffer jumper cable. Nonetheless, any movement of the auxiliary board causes too much stress on the connector and on the flex-cable. Therefore, to avoid any damage, a support was built to hold the auxiliary board and the module on the same frame, thus reducing the risk of breaking anything.

The module consumption is checked at every JTAG step to make sure that no short-circuit occurs. Right after powering the system, the six sensors start in a random state and the consumption at this stage can not indicate any electrical problem. After the reset of the registers, the total consumption should be around 33 mA . Then, the registers are loaded and the consumption should be around 750 mA . These registers are read-back by the JTAG software, indicating if any errors happened. If, during the reading step no error was discovered, the sensors can be operated and their consumption should be around 1300 mA .

An inspection of the output with an oscilloscope is performed to check the slow control and to estimate the response of the sensor. For the normal mode data format with SUZE enabled, the output data of the last frame are sparsified and transmitted during the acquisition of the current one. The information provided by the MIMOSA-26 is contained in four output lines. The first output line corresponds to the clock which is always running even if the data transmission is finished. Its rate depends on the clock rate register. For the normal output mode, it is 80 MHz . The second output line is the marker, which is available in all modes. It is set during four clock's rising edge cycle and might be used to detect the beginning of the data transmission. Then, the two last output lines are dedicated to the data. They contain multiple information. First of all, the beginning and the ending of the data transmission is determined by the header and trailer. The header and/or trailer can be used to detect a loss of synchronisation. They correspond to $2 \times 16$ bits (header0-header1 and trailer0-trailer1) and are fully configurable through the JTAG software. The header is followed by the frame counter which corresponds to the number of frames since the chip was reset. The information is separated into two words (FrameCounter0 corresponding to the least significant bit and FrameCounter1 corresponding to the most significant bit). Then, the data length gives the number of 16 bits words of the useful data. The useful data is split into states/line, which contains the address of the line which has a hit and an overflow flag if the number of states is bigger than the memory limitation. It is followed by the state giving the number of consecutive hits and the address of the first column. Finally, the trailer is ending the data transmission followed by 32 bits of zero. Figure 5.6
is a picture of an oscilloscope recording of a MIMOSA-26 data output. From the top to the bottom, it shows the 80 MHz clock, the four clock's cycle marker, the data0 and data1 with the header and the frame counter. More information about the MIMOSA-26 can be found in the MIMOSA-26 user manual [49].


Figure 5.6 - MIMOSA-26 output from oscilloscope. The top yellow line corresponds to the clock, the blue line below to the marker (which lasts 4 clock cycles), and the green and purple lines are the data output containing the hit information

### 5.2.3 JTAG communication

After adjusting the voltages and looking for any short-circuits, the next step is to control the JTAG communication for every sensor. Since in the PLUME modules, all the sensors are synchronised, only clock and marker signals from one sensor are read back. On the oscilloscope, the trigger is set on the marker. The sensors are configured in the normal-mode data format (80 MHz with zero suppressed output) and the output is checked in three steps. First of all, the sensor is reset, the registers are loaded and read back and then the start signal is sent. Through the JTAG software, header and trailer are modified several times and are checked on the oscilloscope. Then, the
discriminators' response is visualised, specifically to find pixels that always send data even if the discriminators are closed. The number of defective pixels and their position is then estimated. After that, an estimation of the threshold discriminator values to get few hits are determined and the response is checked. Nevertheless, using light to estimate the response of the sensor can impact the pixels' baseline and modify the normal behavior of the matrix. For example, instead of sending more information, the pixels are less responsive. Thus, using a radiation source is a better solution.

### 5.3 Noise measurements

In chapter 4, the principle of CMOS sensors was described and the noise of this technology was discussed. As a reminder, the two noise contributions are Temporal Noise (TN) and Fixed Pattern Noise (FPN). FPN is determined as an offset to be subtracted from the pixel response to reduce its non-uniformity, while TN is coming from the contribution of different noises during the reset, the integration and the readout of the pixel. These noises have to be measured in the laboratory in order to find the optimum configuration to detect physics signals and reduce the noise impact on the measurement.

### 5.3.1 Characterisation bench

The noise estimation is done with a bench of characterisation composed of a National Instruments PXIe crate equipped with a 6562 digital card, two power supplies, a power distribution board, an auxiliary and a JTAG card, as well as the module to test. The procedure described here is applied to a single MIMOSA-26, or a PLUME module, as well as a MIMOSA-28 sensor. Nevertheless, the data acquisition software used during the characterisation is slightly different to match the clock speed, depending on the sensor technology. The four data outputs are connected from the pins on the auxiliary board to the digital card via a National Instruments spider cable. Firstly, a test pattern, which automatically loads a JTAG file for this test, is used to read the header and trailer during several frames with a determined data length. It has been observed that the clock output cable has to be 80 cm longer than the three other cables to ensure the synchronisation on the rising edge. If this is not done or if one of the cables has the wrong polarity, the software is not able to read the header and trailer and the characterisation can't be done.

Then, sensors are configured in the discriminator output mode. The zero suppression mode is bypassed, pixels and discriminators are in normal mode (the whole matrix is read in $115 \mu \mathrm{~s}$ ), but the readout frequency is lower $(10 \mathrm{MHz})$.The control of the discriminators is divided into four submatrices, each containing 288 columns. Thus, for one sub-matrix a threshold value in /glsDAC units in the JTAG software is driving all the discriminators, depending on a baseline value. For one line, usually one located in the middle of the matrix, its baseline response is studied to find the "middle-points" by looking for the threshold of each sub-matrix, in which the discriminators are reaching a half activation. When these "middle-points" are determined, the homogeneity of the matrix is checked, as shown in figure 5.7. Due to the structure of the sensor, the homogeneity is not perfect and some dispersions in the discriminator response are observed between the beginning and the end of a sub-matrix. Moreover, to reduce this dispersion, the reference baseline, and the clamping voltage have to be adjusted.


Figure 5.7 - Matrix response for the discriminators half activated.

Afterward, the thresholds are set to the lowest and highest value to look for defective pixels in the matrix. On the one hand, few pixels can be always activated even if the discriminators were closed. Figure 5.8 depicts the matrix output for when all the discriminators are closed. Therefore, a line is always activated, as well as a few pixels in a column and they are increasing the fake hit rate of the matrix. A solution exists to disconnect some discriminators
in order to reduce the noise of defective columns on the JTAG program, nevertheless, no solution during the sensor programming exists to remove the defective lines. On the other hand, a few pixels can be always deactivated even if the discriminators are completely opened, i.e these pixels are not able to detect any physics signal. This behavior is represented in figure 5.9. To date, no solution exists to make these pixels working properly.


Figure 5.8 - Matrix response in discriminator mode, where all the discriminators are opened. On the right of the matrix, one row is not working correctly and some pixels are never activated

### 5.3.2 Threshold scan

The noise performance of the sensor is determined through a threshold scan around the "middle-point" found before. This threshold scan consists of recording the normalised response of the discriminators or the discriminators and the pixels for different threshold values. For the first possibility, an external voltage is injected into the discriminators while the pixels are disconnected. Only the noise contribution coming from the discriminator is thus determined. In this work, the noise performance results presented were done without injecting an external voltage, but rather with the sensitive system connected to the discriminators. Usually, 29 runs containing between 500 to 1000 events are stored. The files created are used to firstly build a


Figure 5.9 - Matrix response in discriminator mode, where all the discriminators are closed. One line of pixels is always activated, as well as few pixels in one column. This will increase the fake hit rate of the sensor.
configuration file containing the Digital-to-Analog Converter (DAC) values of each sub-matrix for the different thresholds applied. The threshold is here defined as the voltage applied to the discriminators. Afterward, this file is analysed and converted to create an output file containing a hit average picture of each sub-matrix for each step. Then, a macro based on C ++ and the ROOT framework is reading the hit average picture to plot the transfer function, also called "S" curve, as represented in figure 5.10. It shows the normalised response of the 288 discriminators and the pixels contained in this sub-matrix as a function of the threshold applied in millivolts. The temporal noise of each pixel is calculated from the derivative of the "S" curve and is represented here in the left plot of figure 5.11. The mean value of the distribution obtained the mid-point threshold of a pixel. The dispersion of the mid-point threshold corresponds to the fixed pattern noise, represented on the right plot of figure 5.11.

The plot on the left in figure 5.11 represents the temporal noise, while the right one represents the fixed pattern noise. The systematic offset of the discriminator is extracted from these measurements (the mean value of the temporal noise, the mean value and the sigma value of the fixed pattern noise). To calculate the discriminator thresholds of each sub-matrix for a


Figure 5.10 - Pixels response of a threshold scan around the middle-point of discriminators for a sub-matrix.


Figure 5.11 - Noise performances of a sub-matrix for the discriminators and the pixel array output. The temporal noise is plotted on the left plot, whereas the fixed pattern noise is represented on the right plot.
given Signal to Noise Ratio (SNR), the total noise is determined as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { Total noise }=\sqrt{\langle\mathrm{TN}\rangle^{2}+\langle\mathrm{FPN}\rangle^{2}}, \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\langle\mathrm{TN}\rangle$ the mean value of the temporal noise, and $\langle\mathrm{FPN}\rangle$ the mean value of the fixed pattern noise.

For a given $\mathrm{S} / \mathrm{N}$ cut $\sigma$, the thresholds are determined by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { Threshold }(\mathrm{mV})=\text { Total Noise } \times \sigma+\text { offset. } \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is converted into the DAC values by taking into account the DAC offset and the DAC slope, which is assumed to be 0.25 mV :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { Threshold }(\mathrm{DAC})=\frac{\text { Threshold }(\mathrm{mV})-\mathrm{DAC}_{\text {offset }}}{\mathrm{DAC}_{\text {slope }}} \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 5.3.3 Noise measurements

Once the thresholds are defined for the different cuts, the fake hit rate of the matrix, as well as the detection homogeneity is determined. A quick step consists of using the DAQ software and acquiring $10^{4}$ events in the dark to determine the noise qualitatively. The fake hit rate per event per pixel is then defined as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { F.H.R }=\frac{\text { Number of hits }}{\text { Number of events } \times \text { Number of pixels }} . \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Figure 5.12 represents the accumulation in the dark of $10^{4}$ events for a threshold five times bigger than the noise. The measured fake hit rate was below $10^{-4} \mathrm{hits} / \mathrm{pixel} /$ event.

Then, an iron ${ }^{55} \mathrm{Fe}$ source is used to control the homogeneity of the thresholds determined before. Figure 5.13 represents the accumulation of ten thousand events for a threshold five times larger than the noise with an iron source on top of the sensor.

Finally, in order to validate the sensor, the acquisition system used during the test beam is used to calculate quantitatively the fake hit rate. The auxiliary board is connected to a Flex RIO board instead of the digital card. The test beam DAQ software developed by the IPHC is using a LabVIEW interface for the run control. It provides a lot of useful pieces of information,


Figure 5.12 - Accumulation of $10^{4}$ events at a thresholds of 5 times the noise acquired in the dark for one sensor.


Figure 5.13 - Accumulation of $10^{4}$ events at a threshold of 5 times the noise with a ${ }^{55} \mathrm{Fe}$ radiation source for one sensor.
such as the number of events acquired, the header, the trailer and the frame counter of the sensor. This helps the user to know if the acquisition is running properly. If the frame counter is different for each sensor, this points at a loss of synchronisation during the acquisition. Also, a different header or trailer such as the ones set in JTAG software might point out a wrong connection. A second piece of software is used to store the data into three files: a parameter file containing the run number, the event number, an index file and a binary file containing the raw data. Two acquisition modes are available. The first one, used in the test beam, acquires data only when a trigger is sent. The second one stores all frames regardless of the trigger status. This acquisition is the one used in the lab, when only the noise of the sensor is measured.

Several runs each containing one million events are acquired for different thresholds. The data stored are analysed with software developed by the

IPHC called TAPI Analysis Framework (TAF) [51]. It is based on C ++ and the ROOT framework. The software reads the information of the hit pixels, reconstructs the clusters of hit pixels and in the case of a test beam is able to reconstruct tracks from the hit information.

The fake hit rate is determined with respect to the number of pixels hit per event. From the fake rate distribution per pixel shown in figure 5.14 (bottom-left plot), which represents the number of pixels fired per event, the average fake hit rate is calculated as the mean of this distribution divided by the total number of pixels contained in the matrix. The error on the


Figure 5.14 - Results of the fake hit rate measurement for a threshold three times bigger than the noise. The top left plot represents a raw picture of the million events accumulated over the whole matrix. The top right one is the distribution of the number of pixels hit per event. The bottom left plot is the fake hit rate per pixel distribution, while the bottom right one is the fake hit rate relative to the average rate distribution.
measurement is then the root mean squared of the distribution divided by the number of entries and the number of pixels inside the matrix. This calculation is done for different thresholds and figure 5.15 represents the average fake hit rate per pixel per event as a function of the threshold for one sensor of an aluminum module. These results match the expected behavior for a standalone MIMOSA-26 sensor as shown in figure 4.15.


Figure 5.15 - Distribution of the fake hit rate per pixel.

### 5.4 Conclusions

The assembly procedures and tests performed in the laboratory were introduced through this chapter. Only results for one sensor were presented, but several modules were tested. All of them behave the same as the one expected for one single MIMOSA-26. So far, for new PLUME versions which have a narrower flex-cable and which should embed only $0.35 \%$ of the radiation length, different prototypes were built. The first ladder using copper module was assembled in January 2016. New ladders are currently being built and the collaboration is expecting to test them at the DESY test beam facility in 2017. Nevertheless, aluminum ladders seem to be more challenging to build. The three first mirrored versions produced have a problem with the ZIF connector. It could have been damaged by plugging and unplugging the jumper cable. This problem did not occur with copper mirrored versions and this might come from a more fragile flex-cable. Ideally, each module should have is own jumper cable, which then should not be disconnected. Nevertheless, for shipping them, there is no other solution. The collaboration is thinking of a tool which will reduce the stress applied to the connector.

The next chapter deals with the tests performed under realistic conditions at the CERN-SPS facility with the PLUME-V1 prototype in 2011.

## Chapter 6

## Deformation studies of a ladder with beam test

The first full-scale prototype which has twelve sensors glued on a copper flexcable and a $8 \%$ density SiC foam was tested in November 2011 at the CERN Super Synchrotron Proton (SPS) facility, with pion beam of 120 GeV . The motivations to perform such a test in real conditions are, first, to make sure that the individual sensor performance (detection efficiency, spatial resolution) are preserved on a ladder. Secondly, the response homogeneity of each sensor has to be verified. Finally, it has to prove the benefits of a double sided measurement. This chapter does not aim to present fully the test beam campaign and all the results but to focus on a specific study of the ladder's deformation observed during the alignment procedure. More results about this test beam are presented in the thesis of Loic Cousin [61] and Robert Maria [73]. This chapter will present the test beam facility, as well as the experimental set-up. The alignment procedure is explained and some results for a ladder positioned in a normal incidence, as well as a ladder tilted in one direction, are discussed. The second part of this chapter will focus on some deviations observed during the alignment and will discuss a method to overcome these deformations. Finally, the benefits of double-sided measurements will be introduced.

## Contents

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { 6.1 Test beam of the full complete PLUME ladder } \\
& \text { at CERN . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . } 106
\end{aligned}
$$

6.1.1 Test beam facility and beam test set-up ..... 106
6.1.2 Cartesian coordinate systems ..... 106
6.1.3 Measurements ..... 107
6.2 Spatial resolution studies ..... 109
6.2.1 Normal-incidence tracks ..... 109
6.2.2 Ladder tilted in one direction ..... 112
6.3 Benefits of double-sided measurements ..... 122
6.3.1 Spatial resolution with mini-vectors ..... 122
6.3.2 Angular resolution ..... 124
6.4 Conclusions ..... 128

### 6.1 Test beam of the full complete PLUME ladder at CERN

### 6.1.1 Test beam facility and beam test set-up

The test beam was performed at the CERN-SPS in the North hall at the H6 beam line [12]. Negative pions with an energy of 120 GeV were used. The bench set-up consists of a telescope, the ladder, called Device Under Test (DUT) for the rest of the thesis, and photomultipliers. The telescope is equipped with four standard MIMOSA-26 sensors, thinned down to $120 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ and used as reference planes. This telescope is divided into two arms, containing two planes with a spacing of 5 mm between them. The reference planes are stabilised to a temperature of $15^{\circ} \mathrm{C}$ and $8 \sigma \mathrm{~S} / \mathrm{N}$ threshold cut was applied. The PLUME ladder is positioned between the two telescope arms for the tests. For the rest of the thesis, the ladder is called the DUT. The bench has also $7 \times 7$ scintillators used for triggering the data when the beam arrives. Most of the runs were taken with a trigger frequency between 2 and 8 kHz , except for two days where the frequency was oscillating between 1 and 1.3 kHz . The acquisition system is limited to eight inputs: four of them are used by the telescope and the four other ones are used by four sensors of the DUT, two on each side. The temperature of the DUT was stabilised using an air flow cooling system, provided by a fan. Air speed typically reached a few m. $\mathrm{s}^{-1}$.

### 6.1.2 Cartesian coordinate systems

Although the sensors have their own ID to distinguish them during the analysis, the position of each plane has to be known at the micrometer level.

Two Cartesian coordinate systems were defined. The first one is the global one and is determined by the position of each sensor of the telescope in the laboratory. The notation used for this coordinate system is $(x, y, z)$. The $x$-axis corresponds to the horizontal direction, the $y$-axis is the vertical one and the $z$-axis is along the beam direction. The origin $(0,0,0)$ of the system is usually defined by the position of the first plane along the beam path. The second coordinate system is the local one and is determined by the position of the pixels of a single sensor inside this sensor. To differentiate this reference system to the other one, the $(u, v, w)$ notation is used. The $u$-axis corresponds to the pixel rows, the $v$-axis is along the pixel columns and the $w$-axis is perpendicular to the matrix. The origin of the local system is the center of the pixel matrix. Figure 6.1 summarises the definition of the two coordinate systems.


Figure 6.1 - Drawing of the laboratory coordinates. The $x$ and $z$-axes define the horizontal plane. If detector planes (reference or DUT) are not rotated, then $(u, v, w)$ directions match $(x, y, z)$ directions.

### 6.1.3 Measurements

The prototype validation was done with varying conditions, such as the threshold and the temperature and with three different geometrical configurations. On the first one presented in figure 6.2a, the DUT is parallel to the telescope planes and the beam is impinging on the DUT at normal incidence.

(a) Configuration for normal incidence with respect to the beam direction.

(b) Configuration for an angle between 28 and $40^{\circ}$.

(c) Configuration for an angle of $60^{\circ}$.

Figure 6.2 - Top view sketches of the test beam configuration for different ladder positions: 6.2 a is for normal incidence, 6.2 b and 6.2 c are for tilted ladder.

The ladder is placed between the two telescope arms. The middle of the foam is at equal distance from both inner telescope planes. For the second configuration, as shown in figure 6.2 b , the distances between the telescope planes are the same, but the DUT is tilted by an angle between 28 and $40^{\circ}$ around the $y$-axis. Runs with a larger angle ( $60^{\circ}$ ) were also done. Due to the size of the different elements, the PLUME box, the cabling for the acquisition, the air cooling system and the design of the telescope stage, limiting the spacing between the two arms, the DUT was then placed behind the two arms, as
presented in figure 6.2c. For different configurations, different parameters were modified. The thresholds were set to 5 and 6 mV , different sensors were aimed and the air flow speed was set to $3 \mathrm{~m} \cdot \mathrm{~s}^{-1}$ and $6 \mathrm{~m} . \mathrm{s}^{-1}$.

The analysis and the results shown in the following sections were performed with TAF, the analysis software developed by the IPHC and presented in chapter 5.

### 6.2 Spatial resolution studies

One of the measurements performed during the analysis is the determination of the spatial resolution of the sensors on each side of the ladder. As the sensors used are well-known, the performance of the ladder should be similar to the one expected from the single sensor behaviour. Any deviations of the resolution or the efficiency might point to an unexpected impact of the mechanical structure or the flex-cable design on the whole system. The alignment steps to obtain the resolution of the ladders are explained below for different run configurations.

### 6.2.1 Normal-incidence tracks

For each event, the acquisition is recording the position of the pixel hits, the frame number and the sensor ID. The binary file created contains no information about the relative position of each sensor. To perform an analysis, the telescope planes have to be aligned to each other. For this purpose, the hit information of every plane is combined in order to create tracks. A track corresponds to the path of a particle through the system. Thanks to this information, the tracks are then compared to the hits positions on the DUT to give information on the detection efficiency (the ratio of tracks matched to the hits on the DUT) or the spatial resolution (minimum distance to distinguish two incoming tracks).

The alignment procedure is done in two steps: firstly, the telescope planes are aligned to minimise the mismatch of particle's tracks and to improve the tracking resolution. Secondly, the DUT is aligned with respect to the information provided by the reference planes and then, the analysis itself is performed. While the position of each sensor is measured during the test beam with a millimeter precision, for the analysis, a precision at the micron level has to be achieved. Three degrees of freedom were taken into account for the alignment here: two translations for the $x$ and $y$-axes and one rotation around the $z$-axis. The $z$ position is determined by the position measured
during the test beam campaign and is not considered as a free parameter due to the beam used.

## Alignment procedure and telescope alignment

Firstly, the data acquired during the test beam are processed to extract the signal and the hit information. For each frame, the position of the pixel(s) having a signal above the discriminator threshold is stored and assigned to an ID corresponding to the sensor. The analysis software correctly assigns the hit to the sensors and then to group the pixels fired into clusters. As the sensors used during the test beam have a binary output, no information on the seed pixel is available. Thus, the hit position is obtained from a centre-of-gravity calculation.

Secondly, with the analysis software, the first plane is considered as the origin of the telescope coordinate system and is used as a reference for the alignment. Usually, the first sensor hit by the beam is the main reference. The alignment means the correction of the offset for the view angles and the hit position of the telescope planes and the DUT. These offsets are found thanks to scattering plots where the residuals are represented as a function of the predicted hit position. An alignment is considered good when the residuals are not correlated to the predicted hit position. If the distribution of the residuals is not centered around zero, an offset has to be applied in this direction, whereas a slope indicates that a tilt has to be applied. The hit positions of the first plane are extrapolated to the next planes in order to perform the alignment. These extrapolated tracks are straight lines perpendicular to the hits position. Thus, the hit position of the last telescope plane is adjusted to match the hit position of the first plane. The alignment is an iterative procedure which consists in a minimisation of the distance between the extrapolated track to the closest hit on the sensor, also called residuals.

Afterwards, the track candidates are built by matching a hit on the first plane to a hit on the last one. The second and third telescope planes are aligned with respect to the information provided by these extrapolated tracks. For example, figure 6.3 a and 6.3 b show the residual distributions of the second and third planes in the $u$ and $v$ direction with respect to the tracks built by the first and the last planes.

As already explained, the alignment is an iterative procedure. At the beginning, a region of interest of $1000 \times 1000 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ around the extrapolated track is used to find a matching hit. Step by step, this region of interest is restricted to achieve a region of six times the pitch of the sensor.


Figure 6.3 - Residual distributions in the $u$ and $v$ directions for the second and third telescope planes.

After aligning the telescope, a candidate track is dismissed if it is made of less than 4 hits or if the $\chi^{2}$ of the fit is greater than a fixed value determined by the user. Two assumptions are used during the alignment. First it is assumed that the telescope planes are parallel each other. Thus the alignment consists of a translation along $x$ and $y$ and a rotation around the $z$-axis. Second, as the test beam was performed without a magnetic field and pions of 120 GeV were used, Coulomb multiple scattering is neglected. So, the tracks are perpendicular to the detectors and the alignment is not sensitive to the $z$ position. Millimeter precision level for the position does not have a huge impact on the alignment.

## Alignment of the DUT

When the telescope alignment is finalised, the reference tracks reconstructed by the reference planes are used to align the DUT. The DUT's $z$ position is fixed, nonetheless, two degrees of freedom are added to the three degrees defined above ( $u, v$ and $w$ ), namely rotations around the $x$ and $y$-axes. To assist the user in the alignment steps, several scatter plots are produced (see figure 6.4). For example, figures like 6.4 a and 6.4 b help to indicate a tilt in the $z$-direction, whereas figures 6.4 c and 6.4 d help to find shifts and/or tilts in the respective $u$ and $v$-directions. Figures 6.4 e and 6.4 f show the residual distribution in both directions for one sensor of the DUT. The width of these distributions, called spatial residual $\sigma_{\mathrm{res}}$, is approximately $4.1 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ and is a combination of the telescope resolution $\sigma_{\text {tel }}$, the multiple scattering $\sigma_{\text {M.S. }}$ and the spatial resolution of the sensor $\sigma_{\text {DUT }}$, as described in equation 6.1.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{\mathrm{res}}^{2}=\sigma_{\mathrm{tel}}^{2}+\sigma_{\mathrm{DUT}}^{2}+\sigma_{\mathrm{M} . \mathrm{S} .}^{2} \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

With 120 GeV pions, the effects of the Coulomb multiple scattering can be neglected, thus the resolution of the sensor:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{\mathrm{DUT}}=\sqrt{\sigma_{\mathrm{res}}^{2}-\sigma_{\mathrm{tel}}^{2}} . \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

For the configuration of the telescope used in this work, the spatial resolution of the whole system is measured to be $\sigma_{\text {tel }} \simeq 1.8 \mu \mathrm{~m}$, and thus the sensor studied here has a resolution $\sigma_{\text {DUT }} \simeq 3.7 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ for a threshold of 6 mV . This result is corroborating the previous determined resolution of a single MIMOSA-26, as shown in figure 4.15 in chapter 4.

### 6.2.2 Ladder tilted in one direction

The performances of the DUT are also studied for tilted tracks by rotating the ladder with respect to the beam axis around the $v$-direction. Three different angles were tested $\left(28^{\circ}, 36^{\circ}\right.$ and $\left.60^{\circ}\right)$, as well as different threshold cuts and air flow speeds. The results presented below are for a run with a $36^{\circ}$ tilt, thresholds set to 5 mV and an air flow speed of $3 \mathrm{~m} . \mathrm{s}^{-1}$. The same alignment procedure as presented in the subsection above is used, nevertheless, the alignment of the plane along the $u$-direction is more complicated than that in the other directions. The scatter plot in the $v$-direction for the front plane (first DUT sensor to be hit) which is shown in figure 6.5 d represents a good alignment and the spatial residual (see figure $6.5 f$ ) is comparable to the one found for the normal-incidence tracks. However, the scatter plot $\Delta u=$ $f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right)$ as presented in figure 6.5c shows a non-trivial distribution (dubbed "banana shaped") that can not be flattened with a traditional alignment procedure. Moreover, the spatial residual measured in figure 6.5e is larger ( $6.8 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ instead of $\sim 4 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ in the $v$-direction) and the distribution has a large tail positive values. Concerning the back plane, the deformation is also visible in figure 6.6 c but there has a different form. The spatial residual measured for this plane is more than two times larger than the other side $(14.1 \mu \mathrm{~m})$ as it is depicted in figure 6.6e

## Origin of the observed deviations

The deviations observed are mainly caused by the characteristics of the ladder. Ultra-thin sensors with a thickness of approximately $50 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ are used.

(a) Along $u$ direction.

(c) Along $u$ direction.

(e) Along $u$ direction.
(b) Along $v$ direction.

(d) Along $v$ direction.

(f) Along $v$ direction.

Figure 6.4 - Results of the DUT alignment: 6.4 a is the residual $\Delta U$ as a function of the hit position on the $v$-direction, 6.4 b is the residual $\Delta V$ as a function of the hit position on the $u$-direction, 6.4 c is the residual $\Delta U$ as a function of the hit position on the same direction, 6.4 d is the same plot for the other direction, 6.4e and 6.4 f are the residuals distributions in the two directions.


Figure 6.5 - Distribution of the residuals obtained for the front sensor with a tilt of $36^{\circ}: 6.5 \mathrm{a} \Delta u=f\left(v_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.5 \mathrm{~b} \Delta v=f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.5 \mathrm{c} \Delta u=f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.5 \mathrm{~d}$ $\Delta v=f\left(v_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.5 \mathrm{e}$ distribution of the residual $\Delta u$ and 6.5 f distribution of the residual $\Delta v$.


Figure 6.6 - Distribution of the residuals obtained for the back sensor with a tilt of $36^{\circ}: 6.6 \mathrm{a} \Delta u=f\left(v_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.6 \mathrm{~b} \Delta v=f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.6 \mathrm{c} \Delta u=f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.6 \mathrm{~d}$ $\Delta v=f\left(v_{\text {hit }}\right), 6.6 \mathrm{e}$ distribution of the residual $\Delta u$ and 6.6 f distribution of the residual $\Delta v$.

Naturally, without any external mechanical constraint, the internal sensor stress tends to bend it. In addition, the gluing procedure of the module to the flex-cable and the SiC foam induces permanent deformations of the surface that can not be flattened. Also, the foam has an open-cell structure with small bumps and the glue spots might be more or less important on some positions. The Bristol group has performed a survey on a mechanical prototype, which has non-functioning MIMOSA-20 sensors. The chips were thinned and attached to the standard flex-circuits. The measurements done with a laser interferometry survey equipment have revealed a peak-to-peak flatness of the order of $100 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ on both sides. Figure 6.7 shows the result of this survey. The overall shape is due to the intrinsic shape of the foam.


Figure 6.7 - Results of the mechanical survey of each side of a dummy PLUME mechanical prototype. The $x$ coordinate used in this plot is along the ladder length, while $y$ is along its width.

Another additional parameter has to be taken into account to explain the deviation observed. During the analysis, the mentioned non-flat structure is not taken into account. The sensors are modelled as completely flat planes and the $z$-position is fixed. However, the sensor's position in three dimensions is actually different due to deformations. When the particles are not striking the sensor at normal incidence, the hit predicted with respect to the flat plane does not have the same position anymore. Consequently, the residual between the position of the extrapolated track and the predicted hit is increasing. Figure 6.8 depicts the difference between the hit expected $U_{\mathrm{h}}$ on the flat plane and the extrapolation of the actual hit $U_{\mathrm{h}}^{\prime}$ extrapolated. For a normal incidence, these two hits are at the same position, but the larger the angle of incidence, the larger the difference between the expected hit and the extrapolated one is. The deformation height $\delta w$ can be expressed as a function of the angle $\theta$ and the residual $\delta u$ of the track:


Figure 6.8 - Side view of the sensor's deformation.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta w=\frac{\delta u}{\tan (\theta)} \tag{6.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, the visible deformation of the surface is sensitive to the angle of the incoming track. In the case presented above, the DUT is tilted only in one direction and so, the deformations are visible only in the $u$-direction and the residual distribution in the $v$-direction is not affected, even if the deformations are in two dimensions.

## Algorithm to estimate the deformations

The sensor deformations were already studied in Strasbourg by Robert Daniel Maria. One part of the sensor was mapped for the alignment in order to successfully remove the contributions of the deviation on the residual [73]. As this method is done manually and is time-consuming, an automatic method had to be implemented. A similar effect, but over a structure composed of several modules was observed in the CMS tracker during the alignment procedure with cosmic rays, and a method was developed to compensate the deformations [1]. CMS have used modified two-dimensional Legendre polynomials to parametrise the sensors' deformations and they were able to minimise the effect of the deformations during the alignment procedure of the tracker. The method implemented in TAF was inspired by the work
which was done by the CMS collaboration. Nonetheless, contrary to the CMS tracker, the angle was produced only in one direction. Hence, the two-dimensional Legendre polynomials can not be used to parametrise the sensor's deformations. Tracks with a large angle of incidence are more sensitive to the exact position of the plane in three dimensions, so the coordinates of the hits have to be known exactly. The deviations observed in figure 6.5c provide information on the behaviour of the deformation, that is extrapolated to the position of the plane in the $w$-direction. Thus, the hit position is calculated again with respect to the sensor's extrapolated surface shape. This shape is estimated from the track-hit residuals as a function of the hit position in the same direction. A Legendre function is used to fit the curve and the coefficients given by the fit steps are used to calculate the deformation of the plane. Equation 6.4 represents the extrapolated shape of the plane in the $w$-direction calculated with respect to the expected hit position $u_{r}$, which is normalised to the sensor width.

$$
\begin{equation*}
w\left(u_{r}\right)=\sum_{k=0}^{n} \omega_{k} P_{k}\left(u_{r}\right) . \tag{6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The $\omega_{k}$ are the coefficients that quantify the sensor curvature and the $P_{k}\left(u_{r}\right)$ are the Legendre polynomials defined as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{k}\left(u_{r}\right)=\frac{1}{2^{k}!} \frac{d^{k}}{d u_{r}^{k}}\left(\left(u_{r}^{2}-1\right)^{k}\right) . \tag{6.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, the exact hit position is calculated by correcting the hit position extrapolated by $\left(-\omega\left(u_{r}\right) \cdot \tan \theta\right)$, according to equation 6.3 and the residual $\Delta u$ is determined by taking into account the track's angle during the analysis.

## Correction of the deformation

Contrary to the CMS case, the Legendre polynomials used here are calculated in one dimension as the tilt is only in one direction. The scatter plot displayed in section 6.2 .2 was profiled and fitted with a Legendre function. The sum of Legendre polynomials up to different orders was tried to find the function fitting the profile the best. The coefficients obtained after fitting are used to parametrise the surface's shape and the position of the hit. Table 6.1 summarises the different $\chi^{2} / \mathrm{NDF}$ obtained for the different orders, as well as the residuals measured in the $u$ direction after correction.

|  | Front plane |  | Back plane |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Order | $\chi^{2} /$ NDF | $\sigma_{U}^{\text {tront }}$ | $\chi^{2} / \mathrm{NDF}$ | $\sigma_{U}^{\text {back }}$ |
| 3 | $21684 / 84$ | 6.5 | $35575 / 72$ | 13.3 |
| 4 | $1450 / 83$ | 6.2 | $25130 / 71$ | 1.4 |
| 5 | $1450 / 82$ | 6.0 | $1719 / 70$ | 6.9 |
| 6 | $654 / 81$ | 5.9 | $1481 / 69$ | 6.8 |
| 7 | $304 / 80$ | 5.9 | $635 / 68$ | 6.4 |
| 8 | $288 / 79$ | 5.9 | $269 / 67$ | 6.2 |
| 9 | $225 / 78$ | 5.9 | $251 / 66$ | 6.2 |
| 10 | $225 / 77$ | 5.9 | $152 / 65$ | 6.2 |
| 11 | $158 / 76$ | 5.9 | $132 / 64$ | 6.2 |

Table 6.1 - Fit results of the scatter plot $\Delta U=f(U)$ for the first eleventh orders of Legendre polynomials and the residuals obtained on each side of the PLUME ladder.


Figure 6.9 - Profile of the scatter plot showing the track-hit residual in the $u$-direction as a function of the hit position on the plane for the same direction: 6.9a shows the profile of the front plane and 6.9 b shows the profile of the back plane. Both profiles were fitted with a sum of Legendre polynomials up to the eleventh order. p1 to p10 are the coefficients $\omega_{k}$ of equation 6.4 of the polynomials.

A second-order Legendre function does not fit the profile of $\Delta U=f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right)$ very well and does not provide a good improvement on the compensation of deformation. The best improvement was achieved on both sides from the $8^{\text {th }}$ order Legendre polynomials to higher values. Although the $\chi^{2} / \mathrm{NDF}$ is better for higher orders, the width of the residual distribution is of the same order $\left(\sigma_{\text {front }} \simeq 5.9 \mu \mathrm{~m}\right.$ and $\left.\sigma_{\text {back }} \simeq 6.2 \mu \mathrm{~m}\right)$. Figure 6.9a depicts the fit results for the front plane and figure 6.9 b is for the back plane. For both figures,
the deviation is not well fitted for negative values. The dispersion of the residuals is wider.


Figure 6.10 - Results of the alignment after applying the Legendre polynomial correction and taking into account the angle of the incoming particles for the front sensor: $6.10 \mathrm{c} \Delta u=f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right)$ and 6.10 d distribution of the residuals.

For example, using $11^{\text {th }}$ order Legendre polynomial has improved the spatial residual for both planes. Instead of $\sigma_{u} \simeq 6.8 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ for the front plane, the spatial residual is $\sigma_{u} \simeq 5.9 \mu \mathrm{~m}$, equal to an improvement of $13.2 \%$ of the measured spatial residual and achieving a resolution of $5.6 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ for a tilt at $36^{\circ}$. Concerning the back plane, the spatial residual measured was $14.1 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ and after the correction it achieves $6.2 \mu \mathrm{~m}$, equal to an improvement of $56.0 \%$ on the measured spatial residual. The pointing resolution of the plane is then $5.9 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. As it can be seen in figure 6.10c, the deviations are reduced. Nevertheless, the edges of the plot are less corrected. This is due to the fact that the length of the sensor used to parametrise the Legendre function is a bit different from the real size of the sensor due to the deformation. On the back plane, a bump is still visible in the middle of the scatter plot (see figure 6.11c). This may be due to missing information on the deformation of
the sensor in the other direction.


Figure 6.11 - Results of the alignment after applying the Legendre polynomial correction and taking into account the angle of the incoming particles for the back sensor: 6.11c $\Delta u=f\left(u_{\text {hit }}\right)$ and 6.11d distribution of the residuals.

| Side | Tilted angle $\left({ }^{\circ}\right)$ | $\sigma_{U}^{\text {Def }}(\mu \mathrm{m})$ | $\left.\sigma_{U}^{\text {Cor }} \mu \mathrm{m}\right)$ | Improvement |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Front | 28 | $9.0 \pm 0.1$ | $4.9 \pm 0.1$ | $46.6 \%$ |
| Back | 28 | $5.7 \pm 0.1$ | $4.7 \pm 0.1$ | $17.5 \%$ |
| Front | 36 | $14.1 \pm 0.1$ | $6.1 \pm 0.1$ | $56.0 \%$ |
| Back | 36 | $6.8 \pm 0.1$ | $5.9 \pm 0.1$ | $13.2 \%$ |
| Front | 60 | $41.2 \pm 0.15$ | $25.8 \pm 0.2$ | $37.4 \%$ |
| Back | 60 | $23.3 \pm 0.13$ | $21.7 \pm 0.1$ | $6.8 \%$ |

Table 6.2 - Alignment results for different angles before and after using the correction based on Legendre polynomials without taking into account the resolution of the telescope.

This method described above was applied for different incident angles and the results are summarised in table 6.2. The correction based on Legendre
polynomials shows good results for the $28^{\circ}$ angle with a resolution of $4.6 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. Although for larger angles the precision is not expected to reach the expected spatial resolution for a single sensor. For the large angle ( $60^{\circ}$ ), the position of the DUT on the outside of the telescope arms does not provide a good telescope resolution $\left(\sigma_{\mathrm{tel}}=18.8 \mu \mathrm{~m}\right)$. The resolution achieved for the front and back planes are $10.8 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ and $17.7 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ respectively. The sensitivity of the reconstruction to large track angles, as well as an unadapted telescope configurations severely impact the estimation of the spatial resolution of the sensors.

### 6.3 Benefits of double-sided measurements

As two modules are sharing the same mechanical structure, the information provided by each side can be combined together. A mini-vector is created by connecting two hits on each side of the ladder for the same event. This combination gives access to new information compared to a single sensor: the angle of the incoming particle. In this section, the resolution of the measurement of this angle is studied.

### 6.3.1 Spatial resolution with mini-vectors

To study the benefits of the mini-vector, a virtual intermediate plane is defined at the center of the ladder. The two hits on each side of the DUT are connected to form a mini-vector and the intersection of this vector to the intermediate plane is determined. The intersection of the extrapolated track to the intermediate plane is also performed and the distance between the position of the track and the position of the mini-vector is then measured. Figure 6.12 shows the schematic of the mini-vector construction.

A theoretical estimation of the uncertainty on the spatial resolution for the mini-vector is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{\mathrm{m}}^{2}=\frac{\sigma_{\text {front }}^{2}+\sigma_{\text {back }}^{2}}{\left(d_{\text {front }}-d_{\text {back }}\right)^{2}} \cdot d_{\mathrm{m}}^{2}+\sigma_{\text {tel }}^{2}, \tag{6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\sigma_{\mathrm{m}}$ is the resolution on the intermediate plane, $\sigma_{\text {front }}$ and $\sigma_{\text {back }}$ are the resolutions of the two sides of the DUT, $\sigma_{\text {tel }}$ is the resolution of the telescope and $\left(d_{\text {front }}-d_{\text {back }}\right)$ is the distance between front and back planes and $d_{\mathrm{m}}$ is the position of the intermediate plane. For the PLUME ladder,


Figure 6.12 - Principle of the mini-vector. The two hits (in red) on the planes $x_{1}$ and $x_{2}$ are connected and the intersection of the connecting line with virtual intermediate plane $x_{\mathrm{m}}$ is then determined. The blue points represents the track extrapolated through the DUT.
the SiC foam used has a thickness of 2 mm and the intermediate plane is located in the middle. Equation 6.6 can then be rewritten:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{\mathrm{m}}^{2}=\frac{\sigma_{\text {front }}^{2}+\sigma_{\text {back }}^{2}}{4}+\sigma_{\text {tel }}^{2} . \tag{6.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, if the resolution on both sides of the PLUME ladder are similar with $\sigma_{\text {front }}=\sigma_{\text {back }}=\sigma$, the position resolution of the mini-vector $\sigma_{\text {res }}$ is then:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{\mathrm{res}}=\frac{\sigma}{\sqrt{2}} . \tag{6.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

For a run with normal incidence, the spatial resolution measured on each side is $\sigma_{\text {front }}=\sigma_{\text {back }}=4 \pm 0.04 \mu \mathrm{~m}$, according to figure 6.13. Consequently, the uncertainty on the estimated position of the mini-vector should be $\sigma_{\text {res }}=$ $2.8 \pm 0.1 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. The measurement of the standard deviation of the mini-vector displayed in figure 6.14 corresponds to $\sigma_{\mathrm{m}}=3.2 \pm 0.026 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. Taking into account the telescope's resolution ( $\sigma_{\mathrm{tel}}=1.8 \pm 0.5 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ ), the mini-vector's spatial resolution is $\sigma_{\text {res }}=2.9 \pm 0.1 \mu \mathrm{~m}$, when aligned with the expected uncertainties.


Figure 6.13 - Residual distribution for both sides of the ladder in the $u$ direction


Figure 6.14 - Residual distribution of the mini-vector measured on the intermediate plane.

### 6.3.2 Angular resolution

The mini-vectors give access to new information not provided by a single sensor, the particle incoming angle. The direction of a track can be compared to the direction of the corresponding mini-vector. The uncertainty estimation associated with the measured angle is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{\theta}=\frac{\sqrt{\sigma_{\text {front }}^{2}+\sigma_{\text {back }}^{2}}}{d}, \tag{6.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\sigma_{\text {front }}$ and $\sigma_{\text {back }}$ the spatial resolution on each side of the DUT in microns and $d$ the distance between the two sides in microns. The spatial resolution here is $\sigma \simeq 3.6 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ and the distance between the two planes $2000 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. The angular uncertainty is then $\sigma_{\theta}=0.15^{\circ}$.


Figure 6.15 - Distribution of the angle between the tracks direction and the mini-vectors direction.

Figure 6.15 depicts the distribution of the angle residual between track directions and mini-vector directions. As can be seen, several peaks are visible and the distribution cannot be reproduced by a Gaussian fit. To understand the origin of these peaks, a selection on the number of pixels per cluster on each side of the ladder is performed, see figure 6.16.

Firstly, clusters containing only one pixel on each side are selected. A distribution centered on zero is expected, but during the gluing procedure, two pixels facing each other could be slightly displaced, leading to a small angle of displacement, labelled $\delta$. In figure 6.17a, this angle is represented by the projection of the pixel center on one side of the ladder to the other side. A thick arrow represents tracks hitting this two pixels most of the time, whereas a thinner arrow is used for tracks which hit a pixel with a displacement corresponding to a pitch size $p=18.4 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. The angle between the two displaced pixels is $\psi=0.52^{\circ}$, leading to a smaller peak for an angle

(c) $2 \times 2$ pixels per cluster.

Figure 6.16 - Representation of angle displacements between different sizes of clusters on both sides of a ladder. A thicker arrow indicates the main displacement between the two pixels fired, whereas a thinner one is used for tracks hitting a nearby pixel. Grey areas are the position of the reconstructed hit, which could be between two pixels or centered on one pixel, depending on the cluster size.
of $\delta-\psi=-0.40^{\circ}$. In figure 6.16a shows a main peak around $0.12^{\circ}$, as well as a secondary peak around $-0.40^{\circ}$.

Secondly, a selection of clusters containing one pixel on one side and up to two pixels on the other side is performed. Clusters containing two pixels have a centre-of-gravity located between the two pixels. Thus, the angle


Figure 6.17 - Minimum distance between the cluster projected on one side to the position of the cluster of this side.
between the two centres of gravity is $\psi / 2=0.26^{\circ}$. Figure 6.16 b shows this displacement. Grey areas are the position of reconstructed hits, which could be in the centre of a pixel, or between two pixels. In addition to the main peak at $\delta=0.12^{\circ}$, two other peaks are expected at $\delta-\psi / 2=-0.14^{\circ}$ and $\delta+\psi / 2=0.38^{\circ}$. In figure 6.17 b , these three peaks are visible, but a fourth one also appears. Due to the selection performed, there is a contamination of the one-pixel clusters giving a peak at $\delta-\psi=-0.40^{\circ}$.

Thirdly, a selection of up two pixels per cluster on each side is done. In addition to the main peak at $\delta=0.12^{\circ}$, two other peaks are expected. The displacement between two centres of gravity corresponds of a pitch size $p$ (which corresponds to an angle $\psi=0.52^{\circ}$, see figure 6.16c). Thus, these secondary peaks will be located at $\delta-\psi=-0.40^{\circ}$ and $\delta+\psi=0.64^{\circ}$. Nevertheless, in figure 6.17 c , only peaks at $0.12^{\circ}$ and $-0.14^{\circ}$ are visible. It is possible that the displacement of one pitch between the two clusters is unlikely and the peak at $-0.14^{\circ}$ comes from a contamination of smaller clusters.

Finally, for clusters bigger than two pixels on each side, reconstructed tracks have a spread angle centered at $0^{\circ}$.

### 6.4 Conclusions

In this chapter, the test beam campaign done in November 2011 at CERN was discussed. The results focused on the alignment procedure, as well as on the performance of the ladder in normal and tilted positions. Runs in the tilted position were challenging to align due to deviations between the track-hit residual and the actual hit position on the plane. This has the effect of decreasing the spatial residual measured. A wider spatial resolution is expected for bent tracks but in a smaller proportion. An offline algorithm using Legendre polynomials to describe the sensor's shape was discussed. The results obtained for small angles are close to the expected value for a single MIMOSA-26 sensor at normal incidence. Nevertheless, the resolution depends strongly on the incidence angle. For angles of $36^{\circ}$ and larger angles of incidence, this correction is less efficient to improve the measured spatial resolution. It is also be possible that the heating is increasing the deformation and that the cooling system could induce some vibrations. These vibrations might locally change the sensor position. However, not enough data was collected to observe vibrations induced by the cooling system.

The second part of this chapter was addressing the benefits of doublesided measurements. For normal incidence, the resolution of the mini-vectors, which are combinations of the resolution on each side, is better than the spatial resolution of a single sensor. Moreover, mini-vectors give access to another information: the angular resolution. Due to the binary output and the centre-of-gravity hit position reconstruction, multiple peaks are visible and a simple Gaussian fit can not be used. The same work has to be done with a ladder titled with respect to the beam in order to study the impact of deformation on mini-vectors. This additional study was unfortunately outside the time allowable for this work.

The first results obtained are encouraging for this mechanical structure. Nevertheless, the material budget of the ladder is estimated theoretically. The next chapter will introduce a test beam performed at DESY in 2016 and will specifically talk about the measurement of the radiation length for a PLUME-V1 prototype.

## Chapter 7

## Determination of the material budget

The discovery of new physics and the characterisation of the already known particles are only possible with performant detectors. As presented in chapter 4, the fabrication of a vertex detector is mostly constrained by two parameters: the pointing resolution and the material budget. The first fully functional prototype of PLUME was tested in November 2011 at CERN with 120 GeV pions. The results have shown that the pointing resolution of a complete PLUME ladder corresponds to the one expected for a single MIMOSA-26 sensor. Moreover, the use of a double-sided structure improves this pointing resolution. Nevertheless, the material budget ( $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ ) of PLUME has not been studied yet and was only estimated by calculation. The SPS beam contains particles with a too high momentum, that suffer less from the effect of the multiple scattering. Therefore, a test beam campaign of the PLUME-V1 prototype was done in April 2016 at DESY test beam 21 with electrons of up to 5 GeV . Firstly, the test beam setup is discussed. Secondly, the motivation, the test beam facility, as well as the tools used for the analysis are presented. Finally, the last section is dedicated to the data analysis leading to the radiation length measurement.

## Contents

7.1 Preparation of the test beam ..... 130
7.1.1 Measurements and telescope configuration ..... 130
7.1.2 Acquisition system and experimental set-up ..... 133
7.1.3 Issues during the test beam campaign ..... 135
7.2 Measuring the radiation length ..... 136
7.2.1 Motivation ..... 136
7.2.2 Highland formula ..... 137
7.2.3 The DESY II test beam facility ..... 138
7.3 Analysis ..... 139
7.3.1 Software analysis chain ..... 139
7.3.2 Measurement of the radiation length ..... 141
7.4 Conclusions ..... 149

### 7.1 Preparation of the test beam

In April 2016, a test beam campaign with electrons of up to 5 GeV was performed at the DESY-II test beam facility [26]. The different aspects of the test beam have to be carefully considered to minimise problems and the time spent on debugging during the beam test period. The preparation consists of scheduling precisely the different measurements that have to be performed during the restricted time, as well as which geometry to use, the integration of the DUT and the data acquisition system.

### 7.1.1 Measurements and telescope configuration

Although the first prototype was validated with 120 GeV pions in November 2011 at CERN, two aspects were not yet studied. The first one is the ability of the detector to detect and track low momentum particles such as electrons. The spatial resolution, the detection efficiency and the benefits of mini-vectors with the DESY test beam have to be measured and compared to the values obtained at CERN. Runs with different tilts (from $0^{\circ}$ to $60^{\circ}$ with a step of $10^{\circ}$ ) and different air flow speeds for the cooling system ( 3 and $6 \mathrm{~m} . \mathrm{s}^{-1}$ ) are performed to study again the mechanical deformations of the ladder. The second aspect not yet studied is the measurement of the equivalent radiation length of PLUME. For the first time, the collaboration wants to confirm the theoretical estimations, which give a weighted material budget $\left.X_{0}\right|_{\text {weighted }} \simeq 0.65 \%$ for the version tested. Section 7.3 presents the study performed on the radiation length measurement.

Before going to the test beam and acquiring data, the geometry of the telescope has to be determined to optimise the tracking. This depends on the spacing between the different planes and the position of the DUT with
respect to the telescope. The best track extrapolation on the DUT position is achieved by placing the inner planes of the telescope as close as possible to the DUT and the outer planes as far as possible from the DUT. Because of the deformation study, which needs to rotate the ladder (see chapter 6), the inner planes can not be close to the DUT without modifying the geometry at each step. Hence, to keep a consistent alignment and to reduce the time spent on the off-line alignment, it was decided to fix the inner planes as close as possible to be able to rotate the ladder without modifying the geometry. Moreover the ladder is not centered in its box, so to keep an equal distance between the two sides of the ladder and the two inner planes, the minimal distances between the telescope planes are calculated by taking into account an offset. It also has to be noted that, for the radiation length measurement, the geometry is different: here, the upstream planes are stacked together and really close to the DUT, whereas the downstream planes are distant from each other.

For the first time, the collaboration has decided of using the EUDET telescope and EUDAQ [31] for the acquisition, instead of the Strasbourg telescope and the IPHC acquisition. Several configurations are available for the setup. The first ones consist of using the six planes of the EUDET telescope [50] and to have two separate acquisitions, one for PLUME and the second one dedicated for the telescope. Then, the data has to be merged together. As the EUDET telescope is equipped with the same sensors as PLUME, the acquisition can be simplified by having only four telescope planes and directly connecting two sensors of the DUT to the telescope DAQ. A simulation toolkit developed by Simon Spannagel [76] and based on General Broken Lines (GBL) [53] is used to compare the pointing resolution at the DUT position for different telescope geometries. Here, the six and four telescope plane set-ups are compared for different energies and spacings between the sensors. This simulation takes into account the material budget of the telescope, the DUT and the multiple scattering of electrons in the air ${ }^{1}$. One telescope plane has a material budget of $\sim 0.053 \%$ of $X_{0}$, whereas PLUME is $\sim 0.65 \%$ plus two kapton foils used to insulate the ladder from light ( $\sim 0.071 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$ ). For both configurations, the telescope is divided into two arms, with two or three planes on each side of the DUT. The maximal distance between each reference plane of one frame is $d_{\max }=150 \mathrm{~mm}$ for the six-sensors configuration, whereas for the second one it is $\mathrm{d}_{\text {max }}=300 \mathrm{~mm}$.

Table 7.1 summarises the resolution on the track extrapolation at the DUT position for different energies and for the use of four or six telescope planes. It is observed that the number of telescope planes does not have an

[^3]| Energy $(\mathrm{GeV})$ | $\sigma_{\text {res }}(\mu \mathrm{m})$ |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | 4 planes | 6 planes |
| 2 | 4.9 | 4.8 |
| 3 | 3.8 | 3.8 |
| 4 | 3.4 | 3.4 |
| 5 | 3.1 | 3.2 |
| 6 | 3.0 | 3.0 |

Table 7.1 - Estimation of the resolution on the track extrapolation $\sigma_{\mathrm{res}}$ at the DUT position for a telescope with four planes and six planes. Practical issues, such as the alignment, will limit the precision on the track extrapolation to 100 nm .

Resolution VS distance between telescope planes


Figure 7.1 - Estimation of the track extrapolation resolution at the DUT position as a function of the distance between two telescope planes of the same arm for electrons with an energy of 4.7 GeV . The blue line is the results for six planes, whereas the red line is for four planes. The dashed lines are the maximal distance between two planes due to the rail limitation of the telescope frame.
impact on the telescope pointing resolution. Figure 7.1 displays the pointing resolution as a function of the spacing between two telescope planes of the same frame, for an energy set to 4.7 GeV .

Since the number of telescope planes does not impact the pointing resolution, it has been decided to use only four telescope planes and two PLUME sensors (one on each side) to simplify the acquisition system. It is not necessary to acquire the signal coming from all the PLUME sensors due to the size of the beam spot. However, the synchronisation and the stability of the acquisition have to be tested before the test beam campaign.

### 7.1.2 Acquisition system and experimental set-up

## EUDAQ

EUDAQ is a modular cross-platform data taking framework developed for EUDET-type beam telescopes [50]. It is designed to be flexible and to have an easy integration with other devices. The software is based on producers that are linked between the different subdetector systems, such as the beam telescope, the DUT user's DAQ and the Trigger Logic Unit (TLU) [20]. The events of all subdetectors are then correlated to form one single global event for data belonging to one trigger. This step is done by the Data Collector. The robustness of the acquisition setup is tested by performing multiple runs for different configurations in the laboratory. The data are acquired with only the PLUME ladder to ensure that EUDAQ can cope with it, and then single MIMOSA-26 sensors are added and runs of several hours are performed to look for a loss of synchronisation.

## Experimental set-up

Finally, the integration of PLUME for the different measurements to be performed is investigated. For the deformation studies, the DUT is mounted on a rotation stage. With respect to the local coordinate system (or sensor coordinate system), the rotation is along the $u$-direction. The first option considered to perform the rotation is to orientate the ladder in the same direction as the telescope's sensors. Hence, the ladder is in the horizontal position and the rotation needs a complicated frame to ensure the stability of the system. The weight of the box and ladder is applied only on the rotation stage. Due to the complexity and the time needed to build this frame, a second option has been considered: the ladder is placed vertically on a rotation stage. There is a $90^{\circ}$ rotation between the telescope sensors and the PLUME
ones. The frame consists of an insulated aluminum plate on which the DUT sits. To avoid damaging the DUT during the test beam, the flex-cable is fixed to the frame by two clamps. In this way, less strain is exerted:w on the connectors. A plate with screws connects the ladder strongly to the frame. The frame is then mounted onto a rotation stage, which is mounted on a translation stage. Figure 7.2 shows a schematic model of the frame designed and built at DESY.

To control the heating of the ladder during the test beam, a cooling system consisting of a simple fan is used. On one side, a pipe is fixed and connected to the fan. Some studies in Strasbourg were done to determine the air flow speed as a function of the voltage applied. It is shown that for a voltage in the range of 5 V to 10 V , an air flow speed of $3 \mathrm{~m} . \mathrm{s}^{-1}$ to $6 \mathrm{~m} . \mathrm{s}^{-1}$ is obtained. It is sufficient to maintain temperature stability between $40^{\circ} \mathrm{C}$ and $52^{\circ} \mathrm{C}$.

Although two sensors of PLUME are read during the test beam campaign, the clock and marker signals are read from only one sensor. The clock is extended with a 80 cm long cable to ensure that one frame starts on the


Figure 7.2 - TCAD model of the mechanical structure designed for the test beam in April 2016. The ladder is held on a circular frame fixed to a rotation stage, mounted onto an XY-table.
rising edge. The second input of the acquisition is a PLUME sensor (opposite side of the first sensor), followed by the four telescope planes. Moreover, to trigger the acquisition only when the beam passes through the entire setup, photomultiplier tube (PMT)s are placed on each side of the telescope to look for coincidence. Hence, the number of fake events is reduced and the data volume to be recorded:w is smaller. Figure 7.3 shows a schematic of the acquisition and set-up used during the test beam, while figure 7.4 is a picture of the system taken during the test beam.


Figure 7.3 - Schematic of the test beam set-up. The PMTs are used for triggering. The clock and marker are read from only one sensor, here it comes from one PLUME sensor.

### 7.1.3 Issues during the test beam campaign

A broken component on the power distribution board delayed the data taking for two days. One PLUME module was not recording data anymore but was still sending header and trailer. Fortunately, after replacing the broken


Figure 7.4 - Picture taken during the test beam. The beam is coming out of the magnet (large red frame) before reaching the four telescope planes (aluminum square frames), the DUT (elongated box) and the PMTs (one is visible at the left-end of the picture). The set-up is mounted on a floating frame insuring the electrical grounding.
component, the ladder was working normally, but a shift on the thresholds had appeared. By characterising again the ladder, it has been possible to determine which thresholds were really applied. Nevertheless, it is likely that some data could have been corrupted and this is under investigation.

### 7.2 Measuring the radiation length

### 7.2.1 Motivation

The design of a detector is driven by its intrinsic characteristics, such as the pointing resolution or the integration time, but also by some requirements on the material budget. For example, the ILC sets new goals for the design of the vertex detector, but also for other parts of the detector, as mentioned in chapters 2 and 4. For such a detector, the tracking system should precisely detect the particle's path with minimum energy degradation, while the calorimeters
have to accurately measure the energy deposited by the particles. During the physics analysis, the reconstruction of events thus depends strongly on the knowledge of the energy loss by the particles inside the different components of the detector before they reach the calorimeters. To improve the results, a correction on the energy has to be applied. Thus, the study of the radiation length $X_{0}$ in g.cm ${ }^{2}$, which is the amount of matter traversed by a charged particle is an important part of the detector development. For electrons and positrons, the radiation length corresponds to the mean distance over which these particles lose $1 / e$ of their energy by bremsstrahlung.

As detectors are typically made of different layers, the radiation length for composite materials has to be used, which is given as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{X_{0}}=\sum_{j} \frac{\omega_{j}}{X_{j}} \tag{7.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\omega_{j}$ and $X_{j}$ are the fraction by weight and radiation length for the $j^{\text {th }}$ element respectively.

### 7.2.2 Highland formula

When charged particles are traveling through matter, they lose energy via inelastic collisions with atomic electrons and this leads to the ionisations or excitations of atom. Furthermore, along their path, the particles experience many Coulomb scatterings on nuclei that result in small angle deflections. This stochastic effect, called multiple Coulomb scattering, leaves on average the particle undisturbed through its path. For small angles of deviation, the multiple scattering follows a Gaussian behavior, whereas for larger angles, it behaves like Rutherford scattering. The empirical Highland formula [43] describes the distribution of the multiple scattering, or the total "kink angle" $\theta_{0}$, as a function of the momentum $p$ of the incoming charge particles, its velocity $\beta c$, its charge number $z$ and its true path length in radiation length units $\frac{x}{X_{0}}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{0}=\frac{13.6 \mathrm{MeV}}{\beta c p} \cdot z \cdot \sqrt{\frac{x}{X_{0}}}\left(1+0.038 \cdot \ln \left(\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right)\right) . \tag{7.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

For electrons, a modified version of equation 7.2 describes its scattering better than the Highland formula does [38].

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{0}=\frac{13.6 \mathrm{MeV}}{p}\left(\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right)^{0.555}, \text { with } \beta c=1 . \tag{7.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

It thus becomes possible to determine the radiation length $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ of a material knowing the energy of the particle and its thickness $x$ by measuring the kink angle $\theta_{0}$.

### 7.2.3 The DESY II test beam facility

The DESY test beam facility [26] is composed of three areas. The electron beam is produced in the LINAC-II and accelerated up to 450 MeV before being injected into the DESY-II synchrotron ring, which is used as a storage ring for the PETRA-III accelerator. The beam is accelerated and stored until enough particles are available to be sent into PETRA, where they are used for photon science experiments.


Figure 7.5 - Schematic layout of the DESY-II test beam facility [26].
To generate the beam delivered into Hall 26, a graphite fiber target is placed inside the beam pipe. While the electrons are hitting the target, they lose energy and emit bremsstrahlung photons. The photons travel through air and hit another target, on which they are converted to pairs of electrons and positrons. Different targets with different thicknesses are available and this will impact the particle rate. One of the target available is made of copper, whereas the other one is made of aluminum [63]. Further down the particle path, a dipole magnet bends the particle's trajectories and selects particle's momenta. Afterward, a tungsten collimator cuts away the unwanted particles, those having a too high or too low momentum, before the test beam area. A second collimator is located inside the test beam area: it

## Testbeam 21 (e+ @ 6GeV)



Figure 7.6 - Rate for different momentum and with different converter targets [26].
determines the size of the beam spot. Figure 7.5 summarises the different steps to generate a beam of electrons or positrons in test beam 21, while the energies and the rates available are displayed in figure 7.6. The energy spread achieved at the DESY test beam reaches $5 \%$.

### 7.3 Analysis

### 7.3.1 Software analysis chain

The analysis of the test beam data is performed with EUTelescope [32][50]. It is based on the MARLIN framework, which is a part of ILCSoft (see 3.3.1 for more details about the ILCSoft package). The analysis chain consists to convert the data collected from the telescope and PLUME ladder into a format that can be used for the material budget measurement, or another specific analysis. Each step of the analysis is driven by a dedicated processor and is described in figure 7.7.

A processor is used to convert the raw data files, acquired during the test beam, into the LCIO format. The new file created contains the pixel number which fired in a given event, along with the sensor ID. During the conversion,


Figure 7.7 - Flow-chart of the analysis strategy with the EUTelescope software [2].
a hot-pixel search is done to remove noisy pixels from the list of hits. A pixel is considered noisy if its firing frequency is above a threshold value determined by the user (typically the cut value is between 0.001 and $0.003 \%$ ). The noisy pixels correspond to defective raw or column or single pixels always sending information (see section 5.3). Then, a cluster algorithm forms clusters from adjacent fired pixels in a row and/or column. Afterward, the hit candidates are defined with a centre-of-gravity method and the position of the hit is determined in the telescope frame and in the sensor frame using the alignment constants.

Although the alignment procedure looks like the one presented in chapter 6 , the procedure used with EUTelescope is slightly different. The alignment is performed with GBL and MILLEPEDE-II [54]. In the case of a complete telescope (six planes), the tracks are built from the reconstruction
of hit triplets in the upstream and downstream telescope planes. Firstly, a hit candidate from the outer plane is extrapolated by a horizontal straight line to the inner plane of one arm. Then, a triplet is formed if there is a match between the middle plane of the arm and the constructed doublet. This is done on the two arms and a criterion ensures that two triplets are coming from the same track if the distance between the two extrapolated triplets at the middle $z$-position of the telescope is below a cut value. This cut value was set to $10 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. GBL forms a track from the six hits belonging to the matching triplets. The track candidates are then passed to MILLEPEDE-II, which determines the shift and the rotation to apply for aligning the sensors. This method is applied a couple of times, until the precision of the alignment is better than few microns.

Nevertheless, due to the set-up used during the test beam and a limitation in EUTelescope on the number of telescope planes and the ID used, the alignment did not work for practical reasons. The number of telescope planes is hard-coded to be six and the sensor IDs in the range [0;5] are reserved for the telescope. However, in our test beam approach, the IDs 0 and 1 were used for PLUME and the others for the telescope. Thus, a modification had to be applied to remap the sensor IDs.

Thankfully, prototype software developed by Claus Kleinwort has permitted to perform the alignment and finish the analysis. It is based on GBL and MILLEPEDE-II and reads the hit information created by the hitmaker processor of EUTelescope. The modularity of the software allows to select the desired number of telescope planes. In the case of only four telescope planes, the triplets method is not used and tracks are formed only with doublets. Then, the tracks' information is feed to MILLEPEDE-II, which calculates the residuals of the tracks on each sensor and attempts to shift the position and rotate the sensors to minimise the least square fit function of these tracks. MILLEPEDE-II creates an output file with this information and a script updates the GEAR file with the new positions and orientations of all planes.

### 7.3.2 Measurement of the radiation length

## Theoretical estimation

The theoretical estimation of the PLUME's material budget was already discussed in chapter 4. The value defined in that chapter was a weighted material budget, which took into account the passive components and the insensitive areas. For the measurement done here, only the region over a
sensitive surface is studied. There is no passive component and the beam passes through:

- two MIMOSA-26 sensors thinned down to $\sim 50 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ with a material budget of $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {Mi } 26} \sim 0.053 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$ each,
- four layers of glue (sensor/flex interface and flex/stiffener interface) with an estimated material budget $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {Glue }} \sim 0.01 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$ each,
- stiffener made of $8 \%$ density SiC with a thickness of $\sim 2 \mathrm{~mm}$ with a material budget of $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\mathrm{SiC}} \sim 0.184 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$, and
- two flex-cables made of two copper layers insulated with three layers of Kapton:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { - material budget for } \sim 50 \mu \mathrm{~m} \text { of Kapton: }\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\mathrm{Kapton}} \sim 0.014 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}, \\
& \text { - material budget for } \sim 14 \mu \mathrm{~m} \text { of Copper: }\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\mathrm{Cu}} \sim 0.084 \% \mathrm{X}_{0} .
\end{aligned}
$$

It is assumed that the copper layers have a fill factor between $25 \%$ and $30 \%$. Hence, the flex-cable material budget is: $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {Flex }} \sim 0.084-0.092 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$, leading to a total material budget of:

$$
\begin{align*}
\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {PLUME }} & =2 \times\left(\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {Mi26 }}+\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {Flex }}+2 \times\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {Glue }}\right)+\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\mathrm{SiC}},  \tag{7.4}\\
& \simeq 0.498-0.515 \% \mathrm{X}_{0} .
\end{align*}
$$

## Kink angle measurement

To measure the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ of the tracks, four telescope planes, as well as two PLUME sensors are used. To use the triplet method, the hit information provided by PLUME is used during the tracks creation. The deviation from the incoming tracks and the outgoing ones (after the PLUME ladder) is measured with GBL, which provides information for $x z$ and $y z$-angles. The principle of the kink angle measurement is presented in figure 7.8. The upstream


Figure 7.8 - Schematic of the setup that was used throughout the experiment. The beam hit each of the front MIMOSA-26 sensors, then scatter off the PLUME ladder before passing through the last three sensors.
telescope planes are positioned close each other, whereas the downstream telescope planes have a larger spacing to measure the track's deviation.

Figure 7.9 shows the distribution of the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ fitted by a Gaussian for an energy of 5 GeV over the whole sensitive surface. For small deflection angles, the distribution is roughly Gaussian with larger tails than expected for a Gaussian distribution [68]. Therefore, the fit is performed in a range corresponding to one standard deviation of the distribution. To obtain $\theta_{0}$, the width of the kink angle distribution $\sigma_{\text {kink }}$ angle has to be corrected by the mean value of the kink angle fit 〈kink angle〉:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{0}=\sqrt{\sigma_{\text {kink angle }}{ }^{2}-\langle\text { kink angle }\rangle} \tag{7.5}
\end{equation*}
$$



Figure 7.9 - Distribution of the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ given by GBL for an energy of 5 GeV without any fiducial cut. The asymmetry of the distribution arises from an incorrect alignment procedure.

From equation 7.3 and by inserting $\theta_{0}$ defined in equation 7.5 , the material budget $\frac{x}{X_{0}}$ could be derived as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{x}{X_{0}}=\left(\frac{\sqrt{\sigma_{\text {kink angle }}{ }^{2}-\langle\text { kink angle }\rangle} \cdot p}{13.6(\mathrm{MeV})}\right)^{\frac{1}{0.555}} \tag{7.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

The kink angle measured at 5 GeV is $\sim 1.95 \cdot 10^{-4} \mathrm{rad}$, leading to a material budget of $\sim 0.58 \%$ of $X_{0}$, which is larger than the estimated calculation.

This procedure has also been applied to the runs between 1 and 4 GeV (see figures 7.10 to 7.13) and the results of the measured kink angles as a function of the beam momentum are presented in figure 7.14. The uncertainty on the momentum is $5 \%$ as determined at the DESY test beam facility, while the uncertainty used for the kink angle is extracted from the fit procedure corrected by the $\chi^{2} /$ NDF measured. The distribution is then fitted with the

Kink angle distribution at 4 GeV


Figure 7.10 - Distribution of the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ given by GBL for an energy of 4 GeV without any fiducial cut.

Kink angle distribution at 3 GeV


Figure 7.11 - Distribution of the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ given by GBL for an energy of 3 GeV without any fiducial cut.


Figure 7.12 - Distribution of the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ given by GBL for an energy of 2 GeV without any fiducial cut.

Kink angle distribution at 1 GeV


Figure 7.13 - Distribution of the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ given by GBL for an energy of 1 GeV without any fiducial cut.


Figure 7.14 - Dependence of the measured standard deviation of the kink angle with the energy, over the full range of the energies used. Superimposed is a fit using the Highland formula where the material budget is left as a free parameter.
modified Highland formula from equation 7.3, in which the material budget is a free parameter. Two points ( 1 and 5 GeV ) are outside the trend and the measured $\chi^{2} /$ N.D.F for these two points is larger than 1 . Table 7.2 summarises the expected $\theta_{0}$ for a material budget of $0.5 \%$ of $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ and compares this theoretical results to the measured $\theta_{0}$ values.

| Energy $(\mathrm{GeV})$ | $\left.\theta_{0}\right\|_{\text {expected }}(\mathrm{rad})$ | $\left.\theta_{0}\right\|_{\text {measured }}(\mathrm{rad})$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 | $7.186 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | $5.740 \cdot 10^{-4} \pm 2.783 \cdot 10^{-6}$ |
| 2 | $3.592 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | $3.337 \cdot 10^{-4} \pm 7.764 \cdot 10^{-7}$ |
| 3 | $2.395 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | $2.380 \cdot 10^{-4} \pm 1.610 \cdot 10^{-6}$ |
| 4 | $1.796 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | $1.821 \cdot 10^{-4} \pm 7.483 \cdot 10^{-7}$ |
| 5 | $1.437 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | $1.549 \cdot 10^{-4} \pm 1.136 \cdot 10^{-4}$ |

Table 7.2 - Determination of the expected kink angle $\left.\theta_{0}\right|_{\text {expected }}$ for a material budget of $0.5 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$ and comparison to the measured kink angle $\left.\theta_{0}\right|_{\text {measured }}$.

The alignment of the 1 GeV runs is complicated to perform. At this low energy, the electrons are more sensitive to the multiple scattering in the air
and inside the detectors. At 5 GeV , the electrons suffer less from the multiple scattering but the alignment procedure also did not work well. In figure 7.9, the distribution of the kink angle is not centered and the reason for this offset comes from an incorrect alignment. For the rest of the study, these two measurements are excluded in the determination of the material budget, as seen on figure 7.15. The material budget measured is then $0.47 \pm 0.02 \%$ of $\mathrm{X}_{0}$, which is smaller than the calculated one.


Figure 7.15 - Extrapolation of the kink angle $\theta_{0}$ with the energy, over a restricted range of the energies used. Superimposed is a fit using the Highland formula, where the material budget is left as a free parameter.

The smaller calculation could arise from the calculation method used to determined the material budget. The PLUME sensors are used for tracking and measuring the kink angle $\theta_{0}$. During the analysis and the hit reconstruction, the signal is considered to be created in the middle of the epitaxial layer. The thicknesses of the different MIMOSA-26 layers are as follow:

- electronics layer: $\sim 6 \mu \mathrm{~m}$,
- epitaxial layer: $\sim 14 \mu \mathrm{~m}$,
- bulk: ~ $30 \mu \mathrm{~m}$.

The sensors are thinned down to $50 \pm 2 \mu \mathrm{~m}$, but only $\sim 37 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ of silicon is taken into account during the calculation. In total, $0.028 \%$ of $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ is missing
in the calculation. Figure 7.16 is schematic of the PLUME ladder, on which the different parts of the MIMOSA-26 sensors are represented. The reddashed boxed are the regions that are not included in the material budget calculation due to the hit position.


Figure 7.16 - Schematic of the PLUME ladder composition. The substructure of a MIMOSA-26 sensor is represented here. The signal is considered as created in the middle of the epitaxial layer. The red-dashed boxes are the regions of the sensors that are not included into the material budget calculation.

To ensure that the measurement is correct, the different measured radiation lengths are plotted as a function of the momentum (see figure 7.17). Although the fit shows a dependency on the momentum, the error on the second polynomial is larger than the value determined by the fit. The different material budgets determined at different momentum are of the same order and this is consistent with the definition of the material budget.

### 7.4 Conclusions

The material budget measurement of the PLUME ladder was performed for the first time with a dedicated setup placed in a beam. The first results obtained determine the material budget, which gives a material budget of


Figure 7.17 - Measured material budget $\frac{x}{X_{0}}$ as a function of the momentum $p$.
$\frac{x}{X_{0}} \simeq \simeq 0.47 \pm 0.02 \%$ of $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ confirm the theoretical calculation of $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {theoretical }} \simeq 0.498 \%$ of $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ for a flex with a fill factor of $25 \%$. The origin of the shifts on the measured material budget at 1 and 5 GeV has to be investigated. To improve these results, a new procedure has to be planned. Instead of using PLUME sensors for tracking, a complete telescope should be used. Moreover, calibration runs could be performed using well-know materials. These measurements will be used for correcting the reconstructed kink angle $\theta_{0}$ by a factor determined during the calibration procedure [77].

## Conclusions and outlooks

Over the last few years, the scientific community agrees that an accelerator beyond the LHC is needed. This next generation accelerator is required for high-precision measurements, specifically for characterising the electroweak symmetry breaking, as well as looking for events compatible with physics beyond the SM. So far, the most advanced candidate is the ILC. With the technical design report [5], physicists have confirmed that the community is ready to build this future linear collider. A governmental decision is eagerly awaited to start the project. The work performed during this thesis was specifically focused on the feasibility to construct double-sided pixelated ladders suited for a vertex detector at the ILC, that features a low material budget (below $0.35 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$ ) and a spatial resolution below $3 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ for the ILD.

This work is introduced with a physics analysis of simulated data corresponding to collisions in the ILC at a centre-of-mass energy $\sqrt{s}=350 \mathrm{GeV}$. The channel studied underlines the benefits of event types produced by $e^{+} e^{-}$ collisions. It is the one leading to a $\nu \bar{\nu} H$ final state, with the Higgs boson decaying into a pair of quarks or gluons.

The large part of the final particles produced in such events are invisible to the detector. Hence a corner stone of the analysis of this channel is the ability to drastically reduce the contribution of events leading to the same detector response or a similar event signature. The result presented in this work shows that applying a sequence of cuts on eight identified discriminating variables allows to reach a significance of 64 for the signal within the selected events. This level is however not sufficient for the precision measurement targeted with these events, which requires a significance of at least 70. Though sequential cuts are able to reduce the background events by three orders of magnitude, they also remove half of the signal. To improve on result, another thesis conducted by Felix Mueller [33] developed a multivariate analysis approach, which finally reached the desired significance for the event selection process.

After this first important analysis step, the actual characterization of the

Higgs boson can start. But this second study was beyond the scope of this work even if it is strongly related to the goal. Indeed this characterization requires among others to identify jets issued from $c$ quark against those produced by $b$ quarks. This ability sets stringent specifications on the vertex detector layers, since the identification relies on the short lifetime difference between these two types of quarks. The PLUME collaboration hopes to demonstrate the feasibility of such layers, exploiting the concept of doublesided ladders.

The largest part of this thesis work was devoted to study PLUME prototypes, which are currently equipped with CMOS pixel sensors. Since the first small scale prototype (V0) developed in 2009, the collaboration has shown its capability to build full scale and fully functional PLUME ladders. Two versions have been produced so far, the first one (V1) with a relaxed material budget constraint and the final one approaching the $0.3 \%$ of $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ requirement. The work done during these three years was split into checking the basic assessments of individual PLUME module before assembling them into ladders, studying the impact of the mechanical deformations on the pointing resolution and preparing a protocol to measure the radiation length of complete ladders.

The basic assessments are done in the laboratory. For each module, an optical survey is performed to ensure the right positioning of the sensors. Moreover, chips and wire-bonds are checked to make sure that none of them were damaged during gluing procedure or transportation. Then, an electrical test is performed and the six sensors are validated and characterised. The results of these tests have shown that the combination of the six sensors running at the same time in close proximity does not degrade the MIMOSA26 performance. The fake hit rate of each sensor measured for the different modules is below $10^{-6} \mathrm{hits} / \mathrm{pixel} /$ events at a threshold of 6 times the standard deviation characterising the noise level.

During the data analysis of the test beam performed in 2011 at CERN with a V1 ladder, runs where the ladder was tilted with respect to the track direction have shown deviation of the spatial resolution, as well as a correlation between the position of the hit on the sensor and the measured track residual. These deviations come from mechanical deformation induced by the materials used (flex-cables, foam) and the mounting procedure of a PLUME ladder. An offline algorithm to reduce the impact of these deformations has been implemented and has shown a good improvement on the spatial resolution measured for titled tracks. A second study during this data analysis has permitted one to present the benefits of a double-sided measurement. The spatial resolution has been improved by a factor of about $1 / \sqrt{2}$, as expected, and the creation of mini-vectors gives access to a new parameter, the angular
resolution, which was measured to be $0.1^{\circ}$ at normal incidence.
Finally, the last work performed during this thesis was to set-up a test beam with a lower beam energy (up to 5 GeV electrons). One of the goals is to measure the radiation length of the V1 ladder. After analysing the data, the radiation length measured is $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {measured }} \simeq 0.47 \pm 0.02 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$, confirming the theoretical calculation of $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {theoretical }} \simeq 0.498 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$. To improve the precision on the measurement, different methods could be used. Instead of considering the PLUME sensors as reference planes, the six telescope planes could be used for tracking and measuring the radiation length. Another solution could be to perform a calibration run with well-known materials. The reconstructed angle would be then corrected by a factor determined during the calibration procedure.

The work performed during this thesis has shown that the collaboration is able to build a lightweight mechanical structure for a vertex detector. A way to overcome the mechanical deformation inherent to the thin-sensor concept has been discussed. A procedure to control the material budget has been implemented and the first results are encouraging. This thesis, as well as the work performed by Loic Cousin [61] and Robert Maria [73], has shown that CMOS sensors are not disturbed when they are closely laid together (butted and facing each other). The expected performance for one sensor is preserved for a ladder. Nevertheless, more tests and optimisations have to be done to improve the ladder.

Firstly, the results of the test beam performed in April 2016 presented here are focused only on the material budget measurement. The ladder performances (efficiency and spatial resolution) for low momentum particles have to be checked. Runs with different tilts and air flow speeds were acquired in order to study the mechanical deformations in more detail.

Secondly, the ladder new prototype with a material budget of $0.35 \%$ of $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ has been tested only in the laboratory. A test beam in real conditions to measure its performance and its material budget has to be planned. Depending on the results of the test beam, the collaboration could consider achieving an even lower material budget. Another SiC foam with a density of $2 \%$ or a different bonding technique could be used. Two new bonding techniques could be considered: laser soldering or embedding the sensors directly inside the multi-layer micro-cable [7]. This second technique consists of gluing the chips on a polymide substrate layer. Then, a metal layer is deposited on top of it and the metal traces are directly connected to the chips pads. On the last step, an insulator is added to the module. These methods offer the advantage of avoiding wire-bondings and reducing the width of the module.

Moreover, with this structure, mechanical stress is applied on the polymer wrapping and it reduces its impact on the sensors.

Thirdly, the lightweight mechanical structure is validated with MIMOSA26 sensors. They have the advantage of having a continuous readout without suffering from dead time, but their integration time is rather slow $(115.2 \mu \mathrm{~s})$. This does not allow for tagging tracks with the bunch crossing. However, to keep the material budget below $0.15 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$ per measured point, the power consumption of sensors has to be adapted to the cooling system used. One way for decreasing the power consumption is to use a power-pulsing scheme. The sensor's consumption is reduced during the 200 ms of dead time and increased again before the next bunch crossing. The power-pulsing scheme has been tested on a single MIMOSA-26 sensor, but not yet on a complete ladder. The results have shown that during the inactive period, the nominal supply voltage can de decreased from 3.3 V to 1.85 V without losing the sensor's registers [55]. Nonetheless, this sensor is not designed for this purpose and its behavior with other sensors inside a complete ladder is not yet known. For a complete ladder, basic assessments with power-pulsing should be done in the laboratory, before performing tests in real conditions with a high magnetic field (more than 1 T ). The impact of the Lorentz forces on a 10 g ladder need to be studied, specifically to look for unwanted deformations or vibrations induced on the mechanical structure.

Finally, the double-sided concept could be enriched if sensors with different optimisations are mixed on both sides. One side would have highly granular sensors providing a good spatial resolution (below $3 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ ), whereas the other one would have sensors with elongated pixel providing a fast integration time (well below $10 \mu \mathrm{~s}$ ). Basic assessments, as well as the power dissipation have to be studied for this configuration. If the power dissipation is too high, the air-cooling system might not be performant anymore. Microchannels could be integrated inside the mechanical structure, in which a coolant will be in charge of regulating the power dissipation.

Thus, the work presented here is but a initial contribution to the integration of CMOS pixel sensors into double-sided layers and much more is to be expected before the advent of a future lepton collider.

## Résumé de la thèse

### 1.1 Contexte de la thèse

Le 4 juillet 2012 au CERN à Genève (Suisse), les collaborations ATLAS et CMS ont annoncé les premiers résultats d'analyse des données acquises grâce au plus grand accélérateur de particules du monde, le Large Hadron Collider (LHC) [15] [16]. Les deux expériences ont présenté la découverte de la signature d'une particule compatible avec le boson prédit par le mécanisme de la brisure de la symétrie électro-faible de Brout-Englert-Higgs, le boson de Higgs. Bien que l'augmentation de l'énergie de collision du LHC pourrait permettre une meilleure compréhension de cette nouvelle particule et de contraindre encore plus les limites du Modèle Standard, voire de découvrir des traces de physique au delà de cette théorie, la complexité des évènements générés limite l'accès à certains paramètres fondamentaux.


Figure 1.18 - Schéma de l'ILD, un des deux détecteurs prévus à l'ILC.
Un nouveau grand projet en physique des hautes énergies est à l'étude : l'International Linear Collider (ILC). Ce collisionneur linéaire de 31 kilomètres de long permettra la collision d'électrons et de positrons à une échelle d'énergie comprise entre 250 GeV et 500 GeV et ultérieurement 1 TeV , pour des polarisations différentes. Grâce à l'étude des collisions électrons-positrons


Figure 1.19 - Schéma du principe final de l'échelle PLUME.
reposant sur l'identification complète des processus quantiques de chaque évènement, ce nouveau collisionneur devrait permettre de mieux caractériser les particules déjà connues, comme le boson de Higgs grâce à son couplage avec les fermions, mais aussi d'étudier la matière noire. Pour cela la partie centrale du détecteur, dédiée à la reconstruction des chaînes de désintégration survenues avant la première couche instrumentée, doit avoir à la fois une excellente résolution spatiale et un budget de matière ne dépassant pas quelques millièmes de la longueur de radiation $\left(\mathrm{X}_{0}\right)$. Ce sous-détecteur, appelé détecteur de vertex, doit être optimisé afin de permettre la trajectométrie dans un milieu hautement dense en particules et de différencier la nature des quarks $b$ ou $c$ des jets produits.

La collaboration PLUME, qui implique l'IPHC de Strasbourg, le DESY à Hambourg et l'université de Bristol, met en place les outils permettant de surmonter ces défis grâce à une conception innovante d'échelles de trajectométrie double face pixelisée, appelée PLUME $^{2}$ [69]. Ce type d'objet est équipé de six capteurs à pixels CMOS ultra fins (amincis à $\sim 50 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ ), alignés l'un à côté de l'autre, sur chaque face d'un support mécanique très léger et tente d'atteindre un record au niveau du budget de matière en se rapprochant de $0.30 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$. La figure 1.19 est un schéma représentant le principe d'une échelle double face développée par la collaboration. Pour chaque trajectoire, deux positions seront mesurées, une par face. Elles permettront d'évaluer le point d'intersection de la particule avec le détecteur, mais aussi son mouvement et son origine. Si les outils permettant cette double mesure sont maitrisés et optimisés, cela augmentera considérablement les capacités des trajectomètres multi-couches équipés avec ce type d'instrument.

Ma thèse vise à participer à la construction de la seconde génération de détecteurs de PLUME et à caractériser leurs performances.

[^4]
(a) Higgs-Strahlung.

(b) Fusion de bosons W.

(c) Fusion de bosons Z.

Figure 1.20 - Diagrammes de Feynman des principaux processsus de production du boson de Higgs à l'ILC [4] [79].

## 1.2 Étude de la désintégration du boson de Higgs

Afin de comprendre les paramètres du système de détection, j'ai démarré une analyse de physique concernant la désintégration du boson de Higgs en une paire de quarks, l'un charmé et l'autre anti-charmé, à une énergie de centre de masse de 350 GeV à l'ILC pour une luminosité de $250 \mathrm{fb}^{-1}$, avec des données simulées par méthode Monte Carlo.

Contrairement aux canaux de production du boson de Higgs disponible au LHC, l'ILC est capable de produire directement le Higgs, soit par Higgsstrahlung (voir figure 1.20a), soit par la fusion de bosons $W$ (voir figure 1.20b) ou alors par la fusion de bosons $Z$ (voir figure 1.20c). Néanmoins, à 350 GeV , seulement le Higgs-strahlung et la fusion $W W$ sont observables. Je me suis tout particulièrement intéressé à l'état final comportant un boson de Higgs et deux neutrinos. Ces canaux de production permettent une observation particulièrement précise des propriétés du boson de Higgs. En effet, les particules détectées dans l'état final proviennent uniquement de la désintégration du boson de Higgs. Par ailleurs, la production via Higgs-strahlung autorise une étude du boson de Higgs sans considération des produits de désintégration, en étudiant simplement la masse de recul.

L'étude m'a d'abord permis de comprendre l'avantage de la polarisation des électrons et positrons sur le canal de physique que l'on souhaite étudier. Par exemple, la contribution de la fusion de bosons $W$ est atténuée lorsque les électrons sont droits et les positrons gauches. Cependant, le signal étudié est noyé dans un bruit de fond généré pas d'autres processus. Deux bruits de fonds sont considérés, ceux menant à un état final identique à notre signal, ou alors ceux produisant une réponse dans le détecteur similaire à celle du signal. Afin de différencier le signal du bruit, certains critères doivent être définis. Tout d'abord, nous nous attendons à observer deux jets provenant de la désintégration du boson de Higgs. Ainsi, tous les évènements contenant des leptons isolés ne sont pas pris en compte. Puis, une sélection sur l'impulsion

| Processus | Bruit | Signal | Significance |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Section efficace $(\mathrm{fb})$ | $5.69 \cdot 10^{4}$ | $6.82 \cdot 10^{2}$ |  |
| Nombre d'évènements | $1.88 \cdot 10^{7}$ | $2.25 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 5.2 |
| Sans leptons isolés | $1.65 \cdot 10^{7}$ | $2.23 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 5.5 |
| $35<\mathrm{P}_{\mathrm{t}}^{\text {vis }}<155 \mathrm{GeV}$ | $9.31 \cdot 10^{5}$ | $1.82 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 18.7 |
| $95<\mathrm{m}_{\text {vis }}<140 \mathrm{GeV}$ | $1.50 \cdot 10^{5}$ | $1.66 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 40.6 |
| $-1<\cos \alpha<0.22$ | $8.76 \cdot 10^{4}$ | $1.57 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 48.8 |
| $26<(\mathrm{N}$. R.C $>1 \mathrm{GeV})<99$ | $2.25 \cdot 10^{4}$ | $1.19 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 56.3 |
| $0.11<$ DurhamjD2ym $<1$ | $1.78 \cdot 10^{4}$ | $1.05 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 62.3 |
| $0<$ abs(RefinedjPzvis $<113 \mathrm{GeV}$ | $1.51 \cdot 10^{4}$ | $1.01 \cdot 10^{4}$ | 63.5 |
| $156<$ RefinedjEmiss $<230 \mathrm{GeV}$ | $1.37 \cdot 10^{4}$ | $9.85 \cdot 10^{3}$ | 64.1 |

Table 1.3 - Sélection du signal sur le bruit en appliquant différentes coupures consécutives pour une polarisation faisceau $\mathcal{P}_{e^{-}, e^{+}}=(-0.8,+0.3)$. Les colonnes "Bruit" et "Signal" indiquent les nombres d'évènements.
transverse visible est effectuée afin de réduire l'impact des hadrons produits par interaction $\gamma \gamma$. Ensuite, les évènements sont sélectionnés par rapport à l'hypothèse sur la structure de notre signal. Par exemple, la masse visible doit correspondre à la signature du boson de Higgs, qui est de 125 GeV . La résolution de ce paramètre dépend de la résolution en énergie des jets. D'autres paramètres sont utilisés comme par exemple l'angle entre les deux jets $\cos \alpha$. Un critère, appelé significance, permet de déterminer la qualité d'une coupure et est défini par :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { significance }=\frac{\text { signal }}{\sqrt{\text { signal }+ \text { bruit }}} \tag{1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Ainsi, si le bruit de fond est dominant, la valeur de la significance sera faible. Le tableau 1.3 représente le nombre d'événements correspondants au bruit et au signal après avoir appliqué plusieurs coupures. La significance augmente d'un facteur 10 après les trois sélections (nombre de leptons isolés, impulsion transverse, masse visible et angle entre les deux jets). Le bruit est ainsi diminué d'un facteur de plus de 200 et le signal qui nous intéresse a lui aussi été diminué, mais d'un facteur 1.4. La significance atteinte (64) est très proche du niveau (70) considéré comme nécessaire pour caractériser le boson de Higgs et montre ainsi la faisabilité de cette analyse.

La suite de ce travail consiste à étudier la capacité d'identifier les quarks charmés pour différentes géométries de détecteur de vertex. Malheureusement, dû au temps qui m'a été imparti pour effectuer cette thèse, je n'ai pu effectuer cette étude, mais je me suis tourné vers d'autres priorités.

### 1.3 Préparation d'une campagne de tests sous faisceaux

Comme décrit en introduction, l'objectif de la collaboration PLUME est d'atteindre un budget de matière se rapprochant de $0.35 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ pour une résolution spatiale meilleure que 4 microns. La structure mécanique est validée grâce à l'utilisation de MIMOSA-26, des détecteurs monolithiques complexes qui ont une résolution spatiale de $<4 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. Le traitement des données est directement intégré dans les photocites qui collectent les charges. Il permet de numériser directement le signal, grâce à des discriminateurs et de réduire la bande-passante de transmission des données par le biais d'un système de suppression de zéro (ne prend pas en compte les zéros envoyés par les pixels, qui ne représentent pas un signal physique intéressant). Cette méthode permet d'enregistrer les informations individuelles de plus de un million d'impacts/ $\mathrm{cm}^{2} / \mathrm{s}$ sur un capteur contenant plus de 500000 pixels sur une surface de $2 \mathrm{~cm}^{2}$.

### 1.3.1 Validation en laboratoire des échelles PLUME

Les échelles PLUME sont les premiers prototypes double faces associant un budget de matière se rapprochant de $0.30 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ et des pistes métallisées adaptées à la surface de détection de $1 \times 12 \mathrm{~cm}^{2}$, afin de réduire les zones mortes du détecteur. Chaque module doit être validé en laboratoire afin de s'assurer que l'assemblage n'altère pas les capteurs utilisés. Une inspection visuelle est effectuée afin de contrôler l'alignement de chaque capteur l'un par rapport à l'autre et de vérifier qu'aucun d'eux, ou qu'aucune connexions n'aient été endommagés pendant l'assemblage. Chaque échelle est ensuite testée électriquement. La consommation des capteurs, le contrôle JTAG ainsi que la présence de pixels morts sont vérifiés, pour ensuite évaluer les seuils des comparateurs qui vont permettre de discriminer le signal du bruit. Leur point de fonctionnement optimal, leur bruit et piédestaux sont obtenus grâce à une courbe de transfert qui représente la réponse des comparateurs à différents seuils et permet de définir un seuil où le bruit du capteur est supprimé sans en altérer ces capacités de détection. Ensuite, les propriétés de détection de ces capteurs sont contrôlés grâce à une analyse qui permet de déterminer le taux de fantôme de chaque capteur et de vérifier qu'ils détectent correctement une source radioactive.

### 1.3.2 Étude de la déformation des échelles lors d'une campagne de faisceau test

Actuellement, différentes versions des échelles PLUME existent : celles dont le budget de matière est de $0.65 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ utilisant uniquement des pistes métallisées en cuivre; deux nouveaux prototypes, l'un utilisant des pistes métallisées en cuivre et l'autre en aluminium et dont les zones mortes de détection ont été réduites et la densité de la mousse mécanique a été diminuée de moitié. Bien que différentes versions existent, seuls les modules atteignant un budget de matière de $0.65 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ ont été étudiés lors de deux campagnes en faisceau test, l'une réalisée par la collaboration en 2011 au CERN et l'autre que j'ai mené en avril 2016 au DESY.

Les résultats de la première campagne ont permis à la collaboration PLUME de mettre en avant les avantages d'une double mesure. De ces résultats, je me suis intéressé à l'étude des déformations mécaniques de nos échelles et leur impact sur les résultats d'analyse. En effet, lorsque l'échelle est inclinée dans une direction et que le faisceau ne la touche plus en incidence normale, la résolution spatiale se dégrade dans des proportions inattendues. Ce comportement est dû aux contraintes mécaniques qui induisent des déformations permanentes de quelques dizaines de micromètres de la surface ne pouvant être contrôlées lors de l'assemblage. Apprendre à quantifier ces déformations et les prendre en compte pendant notre analyse est essentiel pour valider nos prototypes. Les capteurs sont modélisés par une surface parfaitement plane. Or, la position de ces plans en trois dimensions est différente puisque ceux-ci peuvent être plus ou moins déformés. Ainsi comme il a été observé, la distribution du résidu, ou distance entre la position du pixel touché et de la trace extrapolée, devient plus importante lorsque l'angle d'incidence n'est plus normal à la surface du détecteur. Il faut donc prendre en compte cette déformation dans notre analyse afin de recalculer la position exacte de chaque pixel en 3 dimensions et l'extrapolation exacte sur le plan de la trajectoire.

Grâce à une première étude réalisée par un doctorant du groupe PICSEL et un article de la collaboration CMS sur l'alignement du trajectomètre [1], il m'a été possible de mettre en place un algorithme permettant de déterminer la forme de notre capteur à l'aide de polynômes de Legendre. En prenant en compte l'angle d'incidence des particules, la résolution spatiale est améliorée. Par exemple, l'analyse d'une acquisition où le module PLUME est incliné de $36^{\circ}$, a mis en évidence une déformation en corrélant le résidu à la position de l'impact sur la matrice de détection, par rapport à une acquisition où le plan est en incidence normale. En ajustant la figure 1.21a par un polynôme de Legendre, les coefficients obtenus permettent de paramétrer la surface du
capteur et ainsi de minimiser le résidu, comme montré sur la figure 1.21b. La déviation standard de la distribution des résidus, qui définit la résolution spatiale, passe de $14.1 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ à $6.2 \mu \mathrm{~m}$. En prenant en compte la résolution du télescope qui est de $1.8 \mu \mathrm{~m}$, la résolution atteinte par notre capteur est d'environ $5.9 \mu \mathrm{~m}$.


Figure 1.21 - Résultat de l'analyse de l'échelle inclinée à $36^{\circ}: 1.21$ a résidus point d'impact/trace selon la direction $u$ en fonction de la position du point d'impact dans la même direction avant la correction, 1.21 b résidu selon $u$ en fonction du point d'impact dans la même direction après prise en compte de la déformation, 1.21c distribution des résidus point d'impact/trace avant correction et 1.21 d distribution des résidus après correction.

### 1.3.3 Estimation du budget de matière avec des électrons de basse énergie

Nos échelles doivent avoir des performances similaires à basse énergie à celles obtenues lors du précédent faisceau test. En effet, le détecteur de vertex doit être capable de mesurer les particules qui ont une grande impulsion, ainsi que celles qui ont une faible impulsion et qui ne pourront être détectées par les autres parties de ce détecteur. C'est pourquoi, j'ai préparé et effectué une


Figure 1.22 - Photo prise pendant la campagne de faisceau test au DESY. Le faisceau sort de l'aimant (le gros bloc rouge) avant de toucher les quatres plans de télescope (les cadres en aluminium carrés), l'échelle PLUME montée sur un support rotatif (boîte allongée) et les photomultiplicateurs (l'un est visible à la gauche de la photo devant un plan de télescope).
deuxième campagne de faisceau test avec des électrons de quelques GeV au DESY en avril 2016. Avant de réaliser cette expérience, il m'a fallu m'assurer de l'intégration de notre détecteur au sein du système d'acquisition EUDAQ fourni par le DESY. Un outil de simulation estimant la résolution spatiale en fonction de différentes géométries de télescope m'a permis de définir une géométrie optimale pour étudier à la fois les caractéristiques attendues de l'échelle, mais aussi de pouvoir déterminer son budget de matière et le comparer aux attentes théoriques. Comme la technologie des capteurs utilisés pour le télescope et PLUME sont les mêmes, le système d'acquisition a été simplifié : deux plans de télescope sont positionnés de part et d'autre du détecteur afin de mesurer la trajectoire des particules. Des mesures de plusieurs heures ont permis de vérifier la stabilité du système d'acquisition. En même temps, un support rotatif a été construit afin de maintenir l'échelle à la position verticale et de permettre une prise de données pour des angles variants de $0^{\circ}$ à $60^{\circ}$. La figure 1.22 est une photographie prise durant la campagne de faisceau test et montre le positionnement de l'échelle PLUME, située au centre entre les quatre plans de référence.

Un des objectifs de ce faisceau test est de mesurer le budget de matière de l'échelle PLUME. En effet, seul des calculs théoriques ont permis de déterminer cette valeur cruciale dans la fabrication d'un détecteur de vertex. Les particules chargées traversant un milieu sont défléchies par de multiples diffusions coulombiennes à petits angles causées par les noyaux de la cible. Cette déviation est appelée Diffusion Multiple de Coulomb. La projection
de l'angle de déflexion dépend de l'énergie de la particule incidente ainsi que du matériau. L'écart-type de la distribution de l'angle de diffusion peut être paramétré de la manière suivante :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{0} \simeq \frac{13.6 \mathrm{MeV}}{\beta c p}\left(\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right)^{0.555} \tag{1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

où, $\beta=v / c, p$ est l'impulsion de la particule en $\mathrm{MeV}, x$ la distance parcourue et $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ la longueur de radiation du milieu. Ce processus agissant un grand nombre de fois le long du parcours des particules dans la matière, cela a pour effet une déflexion de leur trajectoire par rapport à la direction initiale. Ainsi, grâce aux plans de référence utilisés en faisceau test, il est possible de suivre le passage des particules avant et après avoir traversé notre échelle PLUME et de mesurer cet angle de déflexion. En connaissant la déflexion moyenne, il est possible d'estimer le budget de matière de l'échelle.

Cette mesure a été réalisée au niveau d'une zone comportant des capteurs sur le détecteur, pour des électrons ayant une énergie variant de 2 à 4 GeV . Les particules traversent ainsi :

- deux capteurs MIMOSA-26 amincis à $\sim 50 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ représentant un budget de matière $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {Mi26 }} \sim 0.053 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$,
- quatre couches de colle (à l'interface entre le capteur et le flex, ainsi qu'entre le flex et la mousse) ayant une longueur de radiation estimée à $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {Glue }} \sim 0.01 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$,
- la mousse de silice de carbure d'une densité de $8 \%$ et d'une épaisseur de $\sim 2 \mathrm{~mm}$, dont le budget de matière est $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\mathrm{SiC}} \sim 0.184 \% \mathrm{X}_{0}$,
- deux flex composés de deux pistes métalisées en cuivre, protéqées par trois couches de Kapton :
- budget de matière pour $\sim 50 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ de Kapton : $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {Kapton }} \sim 0.014 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$,
- budget de matière pour $\sim 14 \mu \mathrm{~m}$ de cuivre : $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\mathrm{Cu}} \sim 0.084 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$.

Pour ces échelles, les couches de cuivre représentent entre $25 \%$ et $30 \%$ de la composition du flex. Ainsi, le budget de matière du cable est :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {Flex }} \sim 0.084-0.092 \% \text { de } \mathrm{X}_{0} . \tag{1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Ce qui représente un longueur de radiation totale de :

$$
\begin{align*}
\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {PLUME }} & =2 \times\left(\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\mathrm{Mi} 26}+\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\mathrm{Flex}}+2 \times\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\mathrm{Glue}}\right)+\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\mathrm{SiC}},  \tag{1.10}\\
& \simeq 0.498-0.515 \% \text { de } \mathrm{X}_{0} .
\end{align*}
$$

La figure 1.23 représente la distribution de l'angle de déflexion pour une énergie de 4 GeV , sur laquelle est ajustée une fonction gaussienne. Cet ajustement n'est effectué que sur un intervalle réduit, correspondant à l'écarttype de la distribution. En effet, le phénomène de déviation à petits angles ne peut être complètement modélisé par une fonction gaussienne, car les queues de cette distribution sont plus larges.

Kink angle distribution at 4 GeV


Figure 1.23 - Distribution de l'angle de déflexion mesurée à une énergie de 4 GeV et ajustée par une fonction gaussienne.

Ces mêmes mesures sont effectuées pour des énergies comprises entre 2 et 4 GeV . La figure 1.24 est un histogramme représentant l'angle de déflexion mesuré en fonction de l'énergie des particules incidentes sur lequel est ajusté l'équation de Highland (voir l'équation 1.8), où la longueur de radiation est un paramètre libre d'ajustement. Ainsi, le budget de matière mesuré est de $0.47 \pm 0.02 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$, en dessous de l'estimation théorique. Cette mesure a été effectuée en prenant en compte les deux capteurs CMOS de l'échelle pour mesurer le parcours des particules. Le signal est considéré créé au milieu de la couche epitaxiée, ainsi une petite partie du capteur n'est pas prise en compte dans le calcul de l'angle de déflexion. Ceci correspond pour les deux capteurs à une perte de $0.028 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$.

Afin d'améliorer cette mesure, une calibration peut-être effectuée avant d'estimer le budget de matière de l'échelle. En plaçant différents matériaux dont la longueur de radiation est précisement connue, il est possible de déterminer un biais de mesure et de l'appliquer lors de notre calcul final.


Figure 1.24 - Extrapolation de l'angle de déflexion en fonction de l'énergie incidente pour une gamme d'énergie comprise entre 2 et 4 GeV . Cette courbe est ajustée par la formule d'Highland (voir l'équation 1.8), où la longueur de radiation est un paramètre libre.

### 1.4 Conclusions

Au cours de mon travail de thèse, j'ai pu étudier l'intérêt d'un collisionneur linéaire électrons/positrons afin de réaliser des mesures précises des propriétés du boson de Higgs. Je me suis tout particulièrement intéressé à un canal de désintégration inaccessible au LHC où l'état final comporte le boson de Higgs ainsi que deux neutrinos. Les différents critères permettant de différencier le signal étudié du bruit ont été étudiés grâce à des sélections sur la région d'intérêt. La séparation obtenue entre signal et bruit de fond indique que cette analyse sera possible à l'ILC. Je n'ai pas pu poursuivre cette analyse sur les données simulées, notamment vis-à-vis de l'étape suivante sur les performances d'identification des jets charmés, mais j'ai poursuivi d'autres priorités sur le développement instrumental.

Ma recherche s'est principalement concentrée sur l'étude et la validation des premiers concepts d'échelles de détections double faces atteignant un budget de matière de seulement $0.35 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$. Un banc de validation a été mis en place au DESY et a permis de vérifier que les performances des capteurs utilisés ne sont pas impactées par la structure unique de ces échelles. Par ailleurs, les résultats de la campagne en faisceau test effectuée au CERN en 2011 ont permis de mettre en évidence l'impact de la déformation des capteurs sur la résolution spatiale de notre échelle lorsque celle-ci ne se trouve plus en incidence normale. L'algorithme développé qui utilise des polynômes de Legendre pour extrapoler la position des capteurs en trois dimensions a permis de réduire l'impact des déformations sur les résultats d'analyse en faisceau test. Bien que les résultats soient encourageants, l'algorithme peut-être amélioré en utilisant une méthode itérative afin de déterminer plus précisément la position de l'impact sur le capteur.

Enfin, grâce au faisceau délivré par le DESY, ainsi que différents logiciels d'analyse, il m'a été permis de réaliser la mesure du budget de matière de nos échelles. Le premier résultat de calcul de longueur de radiation conforte l'estimation théorique avec un budget de matière mesuré de $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {measured }} \simeq$ $0.47 \pm 0.02 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$ pour une estimation théorique de $\left.\frac{x}{X_{0}}\right|_{\text {theoretical }} \simeq 0.498 \%$ de $\mathrm{X}_{0}$

Le travail effectué au cours de ces trois années sont prometteurs pour une utilisation des échelles PLUMES dans le cadre de l'ILC. D'autres applications sont par ailleurs possibles, comme son utilisation pour l'estimation des conditions de bruit de fond machine dans l'expérience BEAST, juste avant le démarrage de Belle-II.

## Publications et conférences

## Conférences:

- 3rd Beam Telescopes and Test Beams Workshop, Janvier 2015, DESY - Hambourg (Allemagne); présentation orale "Observing and correcting the surface deformation of light pixelated detection surface"
- 2015 International Workshop on Future Linear Colliders (LCWS15),Novembre 2015, Whistler (Canada); présentation orale
"Double-sided pixelated layers studies from the PLUME collaboration"
Publication :
B. Boitrelle, J. Baudot, G. Claus, O. Clausse, L. Cousin, R. Gauld, M. Goffe, J. Goldsteind, I.M. Gregor, M. Imhoff, U. Koetz, R. Maria, A. Nomerotski, R. Page, M. Szelezniak and M. Winter "The PLUME performance evaluation" (en préparation)


## Formations

- Linear Collider Physics School ${ }^{3}$ au DESY à Hambourg du 7 au 9 octobre 2013
- $7^{\text {th }}$ Detector Workshop of the Terascale Alliance ${ }^{4}$ à Göttingen du 3 au 5 mars 2014
- Introduction to Terascale $2014^{5}$ au DESY à Hambourg du 17 au 21 mars 2014
- Linear Collider School $2014^{6}$ à Frauenchiemsee du 11 au 15 août 2014
- Introduction school on thermal and mechanical simulations based on finite-element calculations à Berlin du 2 au 4 Mars 2015
- Cours d'allemand au DESY, septembre 2013 à février 2014 (3 heures par semaine)

[^5]- Cours d'allemand avec la PIER school depuis avril 2015 (1 heure 30 par semaine)


## Acronyms

AHCAL Analogue HCAL. 40
APS Active Pixel Sensor. 67
ASIC Application-Specified Integrated Circuit. 67
BDS Beam Delivery System. 29
BEAST Beam Exorcism for A Stable experiment. 73
BR branching ratio. 50
BSM Beyond Standard Model. 52
CCD Charged Coupled-Device. 66
CDS Correlated Double Sampling. 82
CERN Centre Européen pour la Recherche Nucléaire. 2
CLIC Compact LInear Collider. 28
CMOS Complementary Metal Oxide Semi-conductor. 1
DAC Digital-to-Analog Converter. 98
DAQ Data AcQuisition. 68
DC direct-current. 29
DEPFET Depleted P- Channel Field Effect Transistor. 67
DESY Deutsches Elektronen-Synchrotron. 28

DUT Device Under Test. 106
ECAL Electromagnetic CALorimeter. 37
EM electromagnetic interaction. 3
ENC Equivalent Noise Charge. 82
ETD End-cap Tracking Detector. 37
EW electroweak. 7
EWSB electroweak symmetry breaking. 26
FPCCD Fine Pixels Charged Coupled-Device. 66
FPN Fixed Pattern Noise. 81
FTD Forward Tracking Detector. 37
GBL General Broken Lines. 131
GEAR GEometry Api for Reconstruction. 53
GRPC Glass Resistive Plate Chamber. 40
GUT Great Unification Theory. 22
HCAL Hadronic CALorimeter. 40
I2C Inter-Integrated Circuit. 90
ICFA International Committee for Future Accelerators. 28
ILC International Linear Collider. 1
ILD International Large Detector. 2
IP interaction point. 31
IPHC Institut Pluridisciplinaire Hubert Curien. 67
IR interaction region. 29
ISR Initial State Radiation. 52

JTAG Joint Test Action Group. 90
LCIO Linear Collider I/O. 53
LEP Large Electron Positron collider. 41
LHC Large Hadron Collider. 1
LHCAL Low angle Hadron CALorimeter. 40
MAPS Monolithic Active Pixel Sensor. 40
Marlin Modular Analysis and Reconstruction for the LINear collider. 53
MIMOSA Minimum Ionizing MOS Active pixel sensor. 67
MIP Minimum Ionizing Particle. 74
MVA multivariate analysis. 59
OKF Optiprint-Kapton-Flex-cable. 70
PFA Particle Flow Algorithm. 34
PICSEL Physics with Integrated CMOS Sensors and ELectron machines. 68

PLUME Pixelated Ladder with Ultra-low Material Embedding. 1
PMT photomultiplier tube. 135
QCD Quantum Chromodynamics. 10
QED Quantum Electrodynamic. 8
QFT Quantum Field Theory. 6
RTML Ring To the Main Linac. 30
SDHCAL Semi-Digital HCAL. 40
SET Silicon External Tracking. 37
SiC Silicon Carbide. 68

SiD Silicon Detector. 34
SIT Silicon Internal Tracker. 37
SM Standard Model. 1
SNR Signal to Noise Ratio. 82
SPS Super Synchrotron Proton. 105
SRF Superconducting Radio-Frequency. 28
SUSY Supersymmetry. 21
SUZE Suppression de zéro. 81
TAF TAPI Analysis Framework. 102
TCK Test Clock. 90
TDI Test Data In. 90
TDO Test Data Out. 90
TLU Trigger Logic Unit. 133
TMS Test Mode Select. 90
TN Temporal Noise. 81
TPC Time-Projection-Chamber. 34
VXD Vertex Detector. 2
ZIF Zero Insertion Force. 69

## Bibliography

[1] Alignment of the CMS tracker with LHC and cosmic ray data. pages 1748-221, 1088.
[2] About eutelescope analysis strategy. http://eutelescope.web.cern. ch/content/about-eutelescope.
[3] R. Appleby, L. Keller, T. Markiewicz, A. Seryi, R. Sugahara, and D. Walz. The International Linear Collider Technica. 3, 2006.
[4] D. M. Asner, T. Barklow, C. Calancha, K. Fujii, N. Graf, H. E. Haber, A. Ishikawa, S. Kanemura, S. Kawada, M. Kurata, A. Miyamoto, H. Neal, H. Ono, C. Potter, J. Strube, T. Suehara, T. Tanabe, J. Tian, K. Tsumura, S. Watanuki, G. Weiglein, K. Yagyu, and H. Yokoya. ILC Higgs White Paper. page 152, oct 2013.
[5] H Baer, T Barklow, K Fujii, Y Gao, and a Hoang. [1306.6352] The International Linear Collider Technical Design Report - Volume 2: Physics. ... preprint arXiv:13066352, 2, jun 2013.
[6] M. Battaglia. Vertex tracking at a future linear collider. Nucl. Instruments Methods Phys. Res. Sect. A Accel. Spectrometers, Detect. Assoc. Equip., 650(1):55-58, sep 2011.
[7] Jerome Baudot, Olena Bashinska, Nathalie Chon-Sen, Wojciech Dulinski, Franziska Hegner, Marie Gelin-Galibel, Rhorry Gauld, Mathieu Goffe, Joel Goldstein, Ingrid Gregor, Christine Hu-Guo, Ulrich Koetz, Andrei Nomerotski, and Marc Winter. Development of Single- and Double-sided Ladders for the ILD Vertex Detectors. mar 2012.
[8] T. Behnke, J. E. Brau, B. Foster, J. Fuster, M. Harrison, J. P. Paterson, M. Peskin, M. Stanitzki, N. Walker, and H. Yamamoto. ILC Technical Design Report Volume 1: Executive Summary. ILC Tech. Des. Rep. Vol. 1 Exec. Summ., 1:1-60, 2013.
[9] Ties Behnke. The international linear collider. Fortschritte der Phys., 58(7-9):622-627, 2010.
[10] Matteo Cacciari, Gavin P Salam, and Gregory Soyez. The anti-k t jet clustering algorithm. 2008.
[11] Constantino Calancha Paredes, A Dubey, H Ikeda, A Ishikawa, S Ito, E Kato, A Miyamoto, T Mori, H Sato, T Suehara, Y Sugimoto, and H Yamamoto. Progress in the development of the vertex detector with fine pixel CCD at the ILC.
[12] CERN. The super proton synchrotron. https://home.cern/about/ accelerators/super-proton-synchrotron, 2016.
[13] J. Chadwick. Possible Existence of a Neutron. 1932.
[14] Clic home page. http://clic-study.web.cern.ch.
[15] ATLAS Collaboration. Observation of a new particle in the search for the Standard Model Higgs boson with the ATLAS detector at the LHC. Phys. Lett., B716:1-29, 2012.
[16] CMS Collaboration. Observation of a new boson at a mass of 125 GeV with the CMS experiment at the LHC. Phys. Lett., B716:30-61, 2012.
[17] Donut Collaboration, K Kodama, N Ushida, C Andreopoulos, N Saoulidou, G Tzanakos, P Yager, B Baller, W Freeman, B Lundberg, J Morrn, R Rameika, J C Yun, J S Song, C S Yoon, S H Chung, P Berghaus, M Kubanstev, N W Reay, R Sidwell, N Stanton, S Yoshida, S Aoki, T Hara, and J T Rhee. Observation of Tau Neutrino Interactions. 2000.
[18] Jochen Schieck for the DEPFET Collaboration. DEPFET Pixels as a Vertex Detector for the Belle II Experiment. 2013.
[19] G. Contin, E. Anderssen, L. Greiner, J. Schambach, J. Silber, T. Stezelberger, X. Sun, M. Szelezniak, C. Vu, H. Wieman, and S. Woodmansee. The maps based pxl vertex detector for the star experiment. Journal of Instrumentation, 10(03):C03026, 2015.
[20] D Cussans. Description of the JRA1 Trigger Logic Unit (TLU), v0.2c. 2009.
[21] G. Danby, J-M. Gaillard, K. Goulianos, L. M. Lederman, N. Mistry, M. Schwartz, and J. Steinberger. Observation of high-energy neutrino reactions and the existence of two kinds of neutrinos. Phys. Rev. Lett., 9:36-44, Jul 1962.
[22] Wim de Boer. The Discovery of the Higgs Boson with the CMS Detector and its Implications for Supersymmetry and Cosmology. In Time and Matter 2013 (TAM2013) Venice, Italy, 2013.
[23] A. Denner, S. Heinemeyer, I. Puljak, D. Rebuzzi, and M. Spira. Standard Model Higgs-Boson Branching Ratios with Uncertainties. Eur. Phys. J., C71:1753, 2011.
[24] Deutsches Elektronen-Synchrotron DESY. Marlin, a modular application framework for anal- ysis and reconstruction code based on lcio. http://ilcsoft.desy.de/portal/software_packages/marlin/ index_eng.html, 2016.
[25] Deutsches Elektronen-synchrotron Desy and Hamburg Germany. A review of e+ e- Linear Colliders. 22:529-539, 1988.
[26] Test beam at desy. http://particle-physics.desy.de/test_beams_ at_desy/index_ger.html.
[27] M Deveaux, S Amar-Youcef, A Besson, G Claus, C Colledani, M Dorokhov, C Dritsa, W Dulinski, I Fröhlich, M Goffe, D Grandjean, S Heini, A Himmi, C Hu, K Jaaskelainen, C Müntz, A Shabetai, J Stroth, M Szelezniak, I Valin, and M Winter. Radiation Tolerance of CMOS Monolithic Active Pixel Sensors with Self-Biased Pixels. 2009.
[28] Claudio Dib, Vladimir Gribanov, Sergey Kovalenko, and Ivan Schmidt. Lepton number violating processes and Majorana neutrinos. Int. Work. Neutrino Phys.
[29] M T Dova, P Garcia-Abia, and W Lohmann. Determination of the Higgs boson spin with a linear e. 2003.
[30] F. Englert and R. Brout. Broken Symmetry and the Mass of Gauge Vector Mesons. Physical Review Letters, 13:321-323, August 1964.
[31] Eudaq, a generic data acquisition framework. https://eudaq.github. io.
[32] Eutelescope home page. http://eutelescope.web.cern.ch.
[33] Mueller Felix. Development of a triple gem readout module for a time projection chamber \& measurement accuracies of hadronic higgs branching fractions in $\nu \nu \mathrm{h}$ at a 350 gev ilc, 2016.
[34] E. Fermi. An attempt of a theory of beta radiation. 1. Z. Phys., 88:161177, 1934.
[35] R. P. Feynman and M. Gell-Mann. Theory of the fermi interaction. Phys. Rev., 109:193-198, Jan 1958.
[36] Keisuke Fujii, Christophe Grojean, Michael E Peskin, Tim Barklow, Yuanning Gao, Shinya Kanemura, Hyungdo Kim, Jenny List, Mihoko Nojiri, Maxim Perelstein, Roman Pöschl, Jürgen Reuter, Frank Simon, Tomohiko Tanabe, Jaehoon Yu, and James D Wells. Physics Case for the International Linear Collider. 2015.
[37] Y. Fukuda, T. Hayakawa, E. Ichihara, K. Inoue, K. Ishihara, H. Ishino, Y. Itow, T. Kajita, J. Kameda, S. Kasuga, K. Kobayashi, Y. Kobayashi, Y. Koshio, M. Miura, M. Nakahata, S. Nakayama, A. Okada, K. Okumura, N. Sakurai, M. Shiozawa, Y. Suzuki, Y. Takeuchi, Y. Totsuka, S. Yamada, M. Earl, A. Habig, E. Kearns, M. D. Messier, K. Scholberg, J. L. Stone, L. R. Sulak, C. W. Walter, M. Goldhaber, T. Barszczxak, D. Casper, W. Gajewski, P. G. Halverson, J. Hsu, W. R. Kropp, L. R. Price, F. Reines, M. Smy, H. W. Sobel, M. R. Vagins, K. S. Ganezer, W. E. Keig, R. W. Ellsworth, S. Tasaka, J. W. Flanagan, A. Kibayashi, J. G. Learned, S. Matsuno, V. J. Stenger, D. Takemori, T. Ishii, J. Kanzaki, T. Kobayashi, S. Mine, K. Nakamura, K. Nishikawa, Y. Oyama, A. Sakai, M. Sakuda, O. Sasaki, S. Echigo, M. Kohama, A. T. Suzuki, T. J. Haines, E. Blaufuss, B. K. Kim, R. Sanford, R. Svoboda, M. L. Chen, Z. Conner, J. A. Goodman, G. W. Sullivan, J. Hill, C. K. Jung, K. Martens, C. Mauger, C. McGrew, E. Sharkey, B. Viren, C. Yanagisawa, W. Doki, K. Miyano, H. Okazawa, C. Saji, M. Takahata, Y. Nagashima, M. Takita, T. Yamaguchi, M. Yoshida, S. B. Kim, M. Etoh, K. Fujita, A. Hasegawa, T. Hasegawa, S. Hatakeyama, T. Iwamoto, M. Koga, T. Maruyama, H. Ogawa, J. Shirai, A. Suzuki, F. Tsushima, M. Koshiba, M. Nemoto, K. Nishijima, T. Futagami, Y. Hayato, Y. Kanaya, K. Kaneyuki, Y. Watanabe, D. Kielczewska, R. A. Doyle, J. S. George, A. L. Stachyra, L. L. Wai, R. J. Wilkes, and K. K. Young. Evidence for oscillation of atmospheric neutrinos. Phys. Rev. Lett., 81:1562-1567, Aug 1998.
[38] Geant4 multiple scattering. http://geant4.cern.ch/ G4UsersDocuments/UsersGuides/PhysicsReferenceManual/html/ node34.html.
[39] Gear home page. http://ilcsoft.desy.de/portal/software_ packages/gear/index_eng.html.
[40] H. Georgi and S. L. Glashow. Unity of All Elementary Particle Forces. Phys. Rev. Lett., 32:438-441, 1974.
[41] Steven Green, John Marshall, Mark Thomson, and Boruo Xu. Cambridge linear collider group - home page. http://www.hep.phy.cam. ac.uk/linearcollider/calorimetry/.
[42] Peter W. Higgs. Broken symmetries and the masses of gauge bosons. Phys. Rev. Lett., 13:508-509, Oct 1964.
[43] Virgil L. Highland. Some Practical Remarks on Multiple Scattering. Nucl. Instrum. Meth., 129:497, 1975.
[44] A Himmi, G Doziere, O Torheim, C Hu-Guo, and M Winter. A Zero Suppression Micro-Circuit for Binary Readout CMOS Monolithic Sensors. pages 3-7.
[45] ICFA. Final International Technology Recommendation Panel Report. (September), 2004.
[46] The linear collider collaboration home page. http://www. linearcollider.org.
[47] Ilcsoft homepage. http://ilcsoft.desy.de. Accessed: 2010-09-30.
[48] Gregor Ingrid Maria. Challenges for novel experiments at future accelerators. Danube school on instrumentation in Elementary Particle and Nuclear Physics, 2014.
[49] IPHC. MIMOSA26 User Manual.
[50] H Jansen, S Spannagel, J Behr, A Bulgheroni, G Claus, E Corrin, D G Cussans, J Dreyling-Eschweiler, D Eckstein, T Eichhorn, M Goffe, I M Gregor, D Haas, C Muhl, H Perrey, R Peschke, P Roloff, I Rubinskiy, and M Winter. Performance of the EUDET-type beam telescopes.
[51] Jérôme Baudot. TAF short manual. http://www.iphc.cnrs.fr/IMG/ pdf/taf_shortdoc.pdf, 2015.
[52] Goldstein Joel. Low mass vertex detector r\&d. WG4 meeting: low-mass engineering and power dissipation, 2010.
[53] Kleinwort and Blobel (DESY). General broken lines documentation. http://www.desy.de/~kleinwrt/GBL/doc/cpp/html/, 2016.
[54] Kleinwort and Blobel (DESY). Millepede-ii. http://www.desy.de/ ${ }^{\sim}$ kleinwrt/MP2/doc/html/index.html, 2016.
[55] Oleg Kuprash. Power pulsing of the CMOS sensor Mimosa 26. Nucl. Instruments Methods Phys. Res. Sect. A Accel. Spectrometers, Detect. Assoc. Equip., 732:519-522, 2013.
[56] Lcio homepage. http://lcio.desy.de.
[57] T. D. Lee and C. N. Yang. Question of Parity Conservation in Weak Interactions. Physical Review, 104:254-258, October 1956.
[58] H. Li, K. Ito, R. Poschl, F. Richard, M. Ruan, Y. Takubo, and H. Yamamoto. HZ Recoil Mass and Cross Section Analysis in ILD. 2012.
[59] Yiming Li, Chris Damerell, Rui Gao, Rhorry Gauld, Jaya John John, Peter Murray, Andrei Nomerotski, Konstantin Stefanov, Steve Thomas, Helena Wilding, and Zhige Zhang. ISIS2: Pixel Sensor with Local Charge Storage for ILC Vertex Detector. page 11, jun 2010.
[60] Ronald Lipton. Muon Collider: Plans, Progress and Challenges. page 6, apr 2012.
[61] Cousin Loïc. Trajectométrie dans le cadre du projet européen aida, 2015.
[62] O. Markin. Backgrounds at future linear colliders. feb 2014.
[63] Nobert Meyners. Conversion targets. http://particle-physics. desy.de/test_beams_at_desy/beam_generation/e259596/ conversion_targets.pdf, 2002.
[64] M.L. Minges and A.S.M.I.H. Committee. Electronic Materials Handbook: Packaging. Electronic Materials Handbook. Taylor \& Francis, 1989.
[65] Mokka home page. http://ilcsoft.desy.de/portal/software_ packages/mokka/.
[66] E. Noether. Invariante variationsprobleme. Nachrichten von der Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften zu Göttingen, MathematischPhysikalische Klasse, 1918:235-257, 1918.
[67] A Nomerotski, L Bachynska, J Baudot, N Chon-Sen, G Claus, R De Masi, M Deveaux, W Dulinski, R Gauld, M Goffe, J Goldstein, I.-M Gregor, Ch Hu-Guo, M Imhoff, U Koetz, W Lau, C Muntz, C Santos, C Schrader, M Specht, J Stroth, M Winter, and S Yang. PLUME collaboration: Ultra-light ladders for linear collider vertex detector.
[68] K. A. Olive et al. Review of Particle Physics. Chin. Phys., C38:090001, 2014.
[69] PLUME project. http://www.iphc.cnrs.fr/PLUME.html.
[70] Pythia home page. http://home.thep.lu.se/~torbjorn/Pythia. html.
[71] Burton Richter. Very High-Energy electron-Positron Colliding Beams for the Study of the Weak Interactions. Nucl. Instrum. Meth., 136:47, 1976.
[72] RH Richter, L Andricek, P Fischer, K Heinzinger, P Lechner, G Lutz, I Peric, M Reiche, G Schaller, M Schnecke, F Schopper, H Soltau, L Str uder, J Treis, M Trimpl, J Ulrici, and N Wermes. Design and technology of DEPFET pixel sensors for linear collider applications. Nucl. Instruments Methods Phys. Res. A, 511:250-256, 2003.
[73] Maria Robert. Study of the time-dependent cp asymmetry in $d^{0}$ decays in the belle ii experiment, 2015.
[74] Adrian Signer. ABC of SUSY. Journal of Physics G: Nuclear and Particle Physics, 36(7):073002, jul 2009.
[75] The standard model of particle physics. http://www.brighthub.com/ science/space/articles/84750.aspx.
[76] Simon Spannagel and Hendrik Jansen. Gbl track resolution calculator v2.0, April 2016.
[77] U. Stolzenberg, A. Frey, B. Schwenker, P. Wieduwilt, C. Marinas, and F. Lütticke. Radiation length imaging with high resolution telescopes. 2016.
[78] The ATLAS Collaboration. Study of the spin of the Higgs-like boson in the two photon decay channel using $20.7 \mathrm{fb}-1$ of pp collisions collected at $\backslash \operatorname{sqrt}\{\mathrm{s}\}=8 \mathrm{TeV}$ with the ATLAS detector. ATLAS NOTE, 2013.
[79] Junping Tian and Keisuke Fujii. Measurement of Higgs couplings and self-coupling at the ILC. Eur. Phys. Soc. Conf. High Energy Phys.
[80] I Valin, C Hu-Guo, J Baudot, G Bertolone, A Besson, C Colledani, G Claus, A Dorokhov, G Dozière, W Dulinski, M Gelin, M Goffe, A Himmi, K Jaaskelainen, F Morel, H Pham, C Santos, S Senyukov, M Specht, G Voutsinas, J Wang, and M Winter. A reticle size cmos pixel sensor dedicated to the star hft. Journal of Instrumentation, 7(01):C01102, 2012.
[81] Whizard home page. https://whizard.hepforge.org.
[82] Marc Winter. Development of Swift, High Resolution, Pixel Sensor Systems for a High Precision Vertex Detector suited to the ILC Running Conditions. 2009.
[83] C. S. Wu, E. Ambler, R. W. Hayward, D. D. Hoppes, and R. P. Hudson. Experimental Test of Parity Conservation in Beta Decay. Physical Review, 105:1413-1415, February 1957.
[84] Hua Ye. Belle II early physics program of bottomonium spectroscopy.
[85] Voutsinas Yorgos. Ild vxd optimisation. ECFA - Linear Collider Workshop 2016, 2016.

## Benjamin BOITRELLE <br> Développement d'une échelle double face pour la trajectométrie en physique des hautes énergies


#### Abstract

Résumé Le projet PLUME développe des échelles ultra-légères inspirées par le cahier des charges du détecteur de vertex pour le futur $\mathrm{e}^{+} \mathrm{e}^{-}$International Linear Collider (ILC). Nos travaux montrent que, pour une énergie de 350 GeV et une luminosité de $250 \mathrm{fb}^{-1}$, l'ILC donnera accès à des états finals comme Hvv. Les modules PLUME exploitent le concept d'échelles double-face recouvertes de capteurs CMOS afin d'atteindre un budget de matière de $0,35 \%$ en longueurs de radiation. Les tests effectués ont montré que les performances électriques des 12 capteurs intégrés sur ces échelles ne sont pas dégradées. La surface des échelles présente des déformations, mais nous avons mis au point un algorithme spécifique qui permet de corriger leurs effets lors du traitement des données. Finalement, une mesure de la longueur de radiation d'un prototype moins avancé a été réalisée avec un faisceau test au DESY. La valeur obtenue de $0,47 \pm 0,02 \%$ en longueurs de radiation correspond au budget attendu.

Mots-clés : ILC, ILD, capteur CMOS, capteur silicium, détecteur de vertex, échelle PLUME, budget de matière, longueur de radiation, résolution spatiale, déformation mécanique


## Résumé en anglais

The PLUME project develops ultra-light pixelated layers with specifications driven by the design of a vertex detector at the future $\mathrm{e}^{+} \mathrm{e}^{-}$International Linear Collider (ILC). The ILC will give access to final states like $\mathrm{H} v v$, as this work demonstrates for centre-of-mass energy 350 GeV and a luminosity of $250 \mathrm{fb}^{-1}$. PLUME devices exploit the concept of double-sided ladders paved with thinned CMOS pixel sensors in order to reach a material budget of $0.35 \%$ of radiation length. The present study validated that simultaneous operation of the 12 CMOS sensors integrated on such light ladders do not impact their electrical behaviour. Surface deformations were observed but a specific algorithm during the offline analysis was proposed and successfully tested to preserve the native sensor spatial resolution. Finally, a measurement of the material budget of a less advanced ladder prototype has been performed at DESY test beam and yield $0.47 \pm 0.02 \%$ of radiation length, matching the expected value.

Keywords: ILC, ILD, CMOS sensor, silicon sensor, vertex detector, PLUME ladder, material budget, radiation length, spatial resolution, mechanical deformation


[^0]:    ${ }^{1} V$ stands for vector and $A$ for axial-vector
    ${ }^{2} \mathrm{~A}$ group is non-Abelian when the elements of the group are not commutating.

[^1]:    ${ }^{3}$ equivalent of the CKM matrix for the neutrinos' mass

[^2]:    ${ }^{4}$ Coupling between a lepton and a quark

[^3]:    ${ }^{1}$ The simulation is not based on a proper Monte Carlo tool, but calculates the multiple scattering with the approximation of a Gaussian process

[^4]:    ${ }^{2}$ Pixelated Ladder with Ultra low Material Embeded

[^5]:    ${ }^{3}$ https://indico.desy.de/conferenceDisplay.py?confId=7513
    ${ }^{4}$ https://indico.desy.de/conferenceDisplay.py?confId=9389
    ${ }^{5}$ https://indico.desy.de/conferenceDisplay.py?confId $=9263$
    ${ }^{6}$ https://indico.desy.de/conferenceDisplay.py?confId=9329

